fornia
nal
y

Land Biederstedt Bd. 18

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/moderntraveller29condiala

THE

MODERN TRAVELLER.

VOLUME THE TWENTY-NINTH.

BRAZIL AND BUENOS AYRES.

VOL. I.

THE

MODERN TRAVELLER.

A

DESCRIPTION,

GEOGRAPHICAL, HISTORICAL, AND TOPOGRAPHICAL,

OF THE

VARIOUS COUNTRIES OF THE GLOBE.

IN THIRTY VOLUMES.

By JOSIAH CONDER.

VOLUME THE TWENTY-NINTH.

LONDON:
JAMES DUNCAN, 37, PATERNOSTER-ROW.

MDCCCXXX.

LONDON,
Printed by W. CLOWES,
Stamford-street.

CONTENTS

OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

	PAGE
BOUNDARIES OF BRAZIL	1
STATE OF THE COLONY PREVIOUSLY TO 1808	2
HISTORY OF BRAZIL	5
EFFECTS OF THE ARRIVAL OF THE KING	56
DECLARATION OF THE NATIONAL INDEPENDENCE	72
NATURAL HISTORY AND PRODUCTIONS	79
POPULATION	90
PROVINCIAL DIVISIONS	96
PROVINCE OF RIO DE JANEIRO	97
CITY OF RIO DE JANEIRO	99
COMMERCE OF RIO	130
ENVIRONS OF RIO	136
ROYAL FARM OF SANTA CRUZ	144
BAY OF RIO	150
FROM RIO TO PARAIBA NOVA	159
DESCRIPTION OF A BRAZILIAN FOREST	163
FROM RIO TO CANTA GALLO	181
FROM RIO TO CAMPOS GOYTACAZES	195
VISIT TO THE PURIES	212
PROVINCE OF SANTO PAULO	220
CITY OF SANTO PAULO	ib.
FROM SANTOS TO SANTO PAULO	234

PAGE
FROM RIO TO SANTO PAULO..... 239
GOLD MINES OF JARAGUA..... 248
IRON MINES OF YPANEMA..... 254
FROM YPANEMA TO MINAS GERAES..... 254
PROVINCE OF SANTA CATHERINA..... 265
PROVINCE OF RIO GRANDE DO SUL..... 280
ST. PEDRO..... 283
MONTE VIDEO..... 319
PROVINCE OF PARANA..... 335
PROVINCE OF URUGUAY..... 345

DIRECTIONS FOR PLACING THE PLATES.

VOL. I. *MAP of BRAZIL*..... *to face the Title.*
BRAZILIAN HUNTERS..... *to face page* 198
Throwing the LASSO..... 312
VOL. II. *VIEW on the RIVER DOCE*..... 141
Opening of a new ROUTE..... 157
BOTUCUDOES on a JOURNEY..... 173
MARKET PLACE, BUENOS AYRES..... 331
TRAVELLING POST..... 336

THE

MODERN TRAVELLER,

ETC. ETC.

BRAZIL.

[An empire of South America, lying between lat. 4 deg. N. and 34 deg. S., and stretching from the 35th to the 72d deg. of W. long.: bounded on the N. by the Republic of Colombia, French Guiana, and the Atlantic; on the E. and S. E. by the same ocean; on the S. by the Rio de la Plata; on the W. by Paraguay and Peru.]

THE name of Brazil, (derived from the wood so called,*) was at first applied to only a small tract of the American coast, south of the Amazon river. It now comprehends the whole of the Portuguese colonies in South America, which, having been incorporated into a kingdom in December 1815, have since declared their independence under the government of the Prince Royal of Portugal, now Emperor of Brazil. A little more than three centuries ago, the existence of this vast country was unknown; and for thirty years after its accidental discovery, it was almost totally neglected by the Portuguese, who were not in the least degree aware of the importance of the

* Chaucer mentions Brazil wood:

"Him needeth not his colour for to dien (dye)
With Brasil, ne with grain of Portingale."—
The Nonnes Preestes Tale.

This is a decisive proof that the Brazil-wood was known by that name long before the discovery of America. In the inventory of the effects of Henry V. *Rot. Parl.* 2 H. VI. m. 20. is the following article: "11 *Graundes peces du Bracile*, pris vi.s. viii.d."

acquisition. The gold and diamond mines were not discovered till nearly two hundred years after the country had been in their possession. In 1699, some enterprising individuals first began to work several gold mines in the back settlements. The attention of the government being attracted by this circumstance, it was ordained that, on the discovery of a mine, immediate notice should be given to the public authorities, and that a fifth of the produce should go to the king. Other mines were soon discovered; and from the year 1728 to 1734, the king's fifth amounted, on the average, to 480,000*l.* yearly, the whole annual produce amounting to upwards of two millions sterling. It then began to diminish, till the whole produce sank to about one-half, and the royal fifth to 257,500*l.*, which was raised, however, by a duty of 2 per cent on its exportation, and the seignorage on the coinage, to 353,500*l.* The diamond mines were first discovered about thirty years after. These, too, paid a fifth to the government, which has amounted, on the average, to 148,500*l.* In order to secure to the crown the ample revenues arising from these sources, it was found necessary to carry to the most oppressive and injurious extent the restrictions of the colonial system. Not only diamonds, but ivory, brazil-wood, and all ship-timber, tobacco, snuff, and gunpowder, were royal monopolies. The periodical fleets were limited to Lisbon and Oporto in the mother country, and to Pernambuco, St. Salvador, Paraiba, and Rio Janeiro, in Brazil. All goods imported from the mother country, paid a duty of 12 per cent. The system of exclusive companies prevailed in connexion with the most absurd regulations. The taxes, alike impolitic and oppressive, were, in many parts, farmed out to the highest bidders. Salt, as well as iron, was taxed 100 per cent. Every article passing into the gold or diamond districts, paid a duty of two-pence per lb. In passing ferries,

goods paid not according to their value, but their weight. Such was the state of things previously to the emigration of the Court of Lisbon in 1808. British vessels, on their way to the East Indies, or to the South Seas, had been accustomed to touch at the friendly ports of Brazil, and they had often found means to introduce European commodities at a cheaper rate than they could be sent from Portugal; but very strict measures had recently been adopted for preventing this irregularity. No trade of any kind was allowed between the natives and the British; although, as the persons employed to enforce this regulation not unfrequently found it their interest to violate it, the intercourse could not be entirely stopped. Under these circumstances, the population of the Brazilian colonies could not be expected greatly to increase. It is almost impossible to obtain any authentic or accurate information on this point. According to the author of the "Etat Présent du Portugal," Brazil contained, about the beginning of the present century, 12 cities, 66 towns, and 430,000 inhabitants, of whom more than one-sixth were Portuguese. Sir George Staunton, in his account of the Embassy to China, estimates the whites at about 200,000, and the black population at 600,000. 20,000 slaves were then annually imported, of whom about 5000 were sold at Rio. Many of the slaves were the property of the crown, about 10,000 being employed in the diamond mines. Others were attached to convents: the Benedictines alone had 1000 upon their plantations. M. de Beauchamp carries the estimate of the population in 1806, to 800,000 Europeans, 1,500,000 negroes, and from 8 to 900,000 civilized Indians. This has been considered as an exaggeration. Taking the population at three millions, this would give only an individual for every square mile of the immense area comprised within the empire; the greater part of which still consists of almost impenetrable

forests or uninhabitable deserts. According to the last census, however, the population had already risen, in consequence chiefly of the tide of emigration being directed to Brazil, to nearly four millions, of whom about one-half are supposed to be free: viz. 343,000 whites, 426,000 mulattoes, 260,000 Indians, and 160,000 free blacks: the remainder consist of about two millions of slaves. The revenue, which, in 1818, amounted to little more than fourteen millions of francs, or between 6 and 700,000*l.*, had risen, in 1820, to sixty-one millions of francs, in 1823, to upwards of ninety-four millions, or about 4,000,000*l.* sterling, and is rapidly augmenting.

The moral condition of the people, up to the era of the arrival of the Prince Regent of Portugal, was as deplorably vicious and degraded, as their political circumstances were depressed and unfavourable. All that is sublime in inanimate nature, in contrast with all that is disgusting in human nature, was comprised in the aspect and character of this portion of the New World. "The cities for which Abraham interceded, Cyprus, Carthage, Crete, and Sparta, had joined," says a modern traveller, "at the period when my acquaintance with the country began, to form the social order of Rio Janeiro." Nor were the manners of the capital marked by much deeper turpitude than those of the other cities. "Depravity," he adds, "was not there redeemed by any national qualities of a solid, nor even of a showy kind. It was not in general thought necessary to maintain that shadow of virtue, hypocrisy. Vices which elsewhere men are the most careful to hide, were seen stalking abroad as publicly and unblushingly as the most abandoned could desire. Not negroes and the populace alone contemplated them with apathy: the moral taste and feeling of persons of a higher cast partook so much of the common taint, that when we mentioned with horror the worst of crimes, which we were

obliged to witness, they often advanced something by way of defence, and really appeared as much surprised at our mode of thinking, as if we had broached a new religion, or foisted into the old one some scrupulous fancies. The life of an undistinguished individual was not worth two dollars: for a smaller sum, any coward could hire a bravo to take it away." The most profound ignorance and the extreme of filthiness in the habits of the people, completed the revolting picture. The ceremonies of the Roman catholic religion were in the meanwhile duly celebrated, and superstition blended itself, as in the European towns, with the grossest voluptuousness. The monks, "an ignorant and debauched crew," at once sluggards and libertines, swarmed in every street. Such was, and, to a certain extent, such is, Brazil,—that land of wonders, whose rivers roll over beds of gold, where the rocks glow with topazes, and the sands sparkle with diamonds,—where nature assumes her richest dress beneath the blaze of tropical suns, and birds of the gaudiest plumage vie with the splendid efflorescence of the forests they inhabit. Previously, however, to our taking a more particular survey of the country, our readers will claim a more detailed account of the

HISTORY OF BRAZIL.

THE last year of the fifteenth century was signalized by the discovery of the southern portion of the American continent. Vicente Yanez Pinzon, a native of Paloz, on the coast of Murcia, and one of the companions of Columbus in his first voyage, was the first Spaniard who ventured to cross the equinoctial line. He stood boldly towards the south, and on the 26th of January, 1500, he saw land, to which he gave the name of Cape Consolation. This was that point of the coast of Brazil, about

twenty miles to the south of Pernambuco, which is now called Cape St. Augustine. Here he landed, cut the names of the ships and the date of the year upon some trees and rocks, and took possession of the country for the crown of Castile, but made no settlement. Continuing along the coast, he discovered the mouth of the river Maranham, or river of the Amazons. In common, however, with all preceding navigators, he is said to have adopted the erroneous theory of Columbus, and to have believed that these newly discovered countries were part of the vast continent of India.* Having lost three of his ships on the voyage, and several of his men having been killed in a rencounter with the natives,† he was obliged to content himself with having made these discoveries, and returned to Europe, carrying with him several drugs, some precious stones, and a large cargo of Brazil-wood.

* Hence the name of *West Indies* was given to this country, and that of *Indian*, to its inhabitants.—See *Robertson's America*, b. ii.

† "A party of natives were assembled upon a hill near the shore, and one of the Spaniards, who was well armed, advanced singly toward them. They came to meet him, suspecting, and at the same time, intending evil. The Spaniard made all the friendly signs he could devise, and threw to them a hawk's-bell, for which they threw down something which was supposed to be a piece of gold; he stooped for it, and they sprang forward to seize him. This, however, was not so easy as they suspected; though neither a large nor a robust man, he defended himself with sword and shield to the admiration of his comrades, who hastened to his assistance, and succeeded in rescuing him, but with great loss. The savages, with their deadly archery, slew eight, wounded many more, and pursued them to their boats. Not satisfied with this success, they attacked the boats. It was then that, being naked, they felt the edge of European swords. But nothing deterred them; they rushed on like wild beasts, despising wounds and death; followed the boats even when they had put off, dived after them, and fairly won one of them, having slain its captain, and driven out the crew. Scarcely a man got off without a wound; and had the arrows of the natives been poisoned, scarcely one could have escaped."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 4.

While Pinzon was thus occupied, Portugal was fitting out a fleet, with much pomp and parade, in the Tagus, —not with the project of discovering any new territory, but for the purpose of following up the successful voyage of Vasco da Gama, who had just returned from the East, having ascertained the navigation to India by doubling the Cape of Good Hope. This second expedition accidentally discovered for Portugal, a wider and more important empire than had been ascertained by the first. Pedro Alvarez Cabral was appointed to the command of the fleet, which sailed from the Tagus on the 9th of March, 1500. In order to avoid the calms which prevail along the coast of Africa, Cabral stood out to sea, and kept so far to the westward, that, on the 25th of April, he found himself, to his surprise, upon the coast of an unknown country in the tenth degree beyond the line. The first land which he saw, was a high round mountain, with a range of hills to the south, and a low shore covered with wood. The mountain he called Mount Paschal, and to the country he gave the name of Terra de Vera Cruz, the Land of the True Cross. Cabral at first imagined the country which he had discovered, to be a large island; but, proceeding along the coast, he was led to believe that a country so extensive must form a part of some great continent. On Good Friday, the fleet anchored in a harbour, the commodious appearance of which tempted him to land; and on Easter day, the first Christian altar was set up on the soil of South America. The natives were alarmed, and fled to their hills; but the Portuguese, having secured two, presented them some mirrors, brass rings, and bells, which were found the most acceptable articles, and then allowed them to rejoin their countrymen. The fears of the natives being immediately dissipated by this friendly behaviour, they now flocked to the vessel with as much delight and confidence as they had

before testified suspicion and aversion.* They approached singing and dancing, with all the uncouth gesticulations of savage joy, and an intercourse was immediately opened between them and the Portuguese. But first of all, after the example of Columbus, Cabral erected a wooden crucifix, before which the Portuguese prostrated themselves, and the natives followed their example; high mass was performed, to the delight of the Indians, and formal possession was taken of the country for the crown of Portugal. He called the harbour Porto Seguro.† Having despatched a small vessel to Lisbon with information of this important event, he sailed from Porto Seguro on the 2d of May, and proceeded on his voyage to India. "Columbus's discovery of the New World," remarks Dr. Robertson, "was the effort of an active genius enlightened by science, guided by experience, and acting upon a regular plan, executed with no less courage than perseverance. But, from this adventure of the Portuguese, it appears that chance might have accomplished that great design which it is now the pride of human reason to have formed and perfected. If the sagacity of Columbus had not conducted mankind to America, Cabral, by a fortunate accident, might have led them, a few years later, to the knowledge of that extensive continent."

When the tidings of the discovery reached Europe, Emmanuel, the king of Portugal, immediately fitted out three ships to explore the country, and invited Amerigo Vespucci from Seville to take the command of the expedition. They sailed about the middle of May in the en-

* They are described as the gentlest and most docile of all the Brazilian tribes. They were of a dark copper colour, entirely naked, their bodies painted with various colours, and armed with bows and arrows.

† Now called Cabralia. The name of Porto Seguro has been erroneously transferred to a place four leagues further southward.

suing year, and, after a very distressing voyage, arrived off the coast, where they succeeded in establishing a friendly intercourse with some tribes of the aborigines, notwithstanding that they soon ascertained them to be cannibals.* The savages expressed astonishment when informed that the Portuguese killed men, and did not eat them. The ships returned to Lisbon in 1502. In the spring of the ensuing year, Amerigo again set sail, with six caravels, for the purpose of prosecuting still further the examination of Vera Cruz; but four of the vessels were lost in consequence of the ignorance of the senior commander.† The other two reached a port which they called All Saints, where they remained five months on friendly

* "They first arrived in latitude 5 deg. S. and on the day after, they saw a party of natives assembled on a hill. Two of the sailors volunteered to go on shore, and several days passed without their return. At length the Portuguese landed, sent a young man to meet the savages, and returned to their boats. The women came forward to meet him apparently as negotiators. They surrounded him, handling and examining him with evident curiosity and wonder. Presently there came down another woman from the hill, having a stake in her hand, with which she got behind him, and dealt him a blow that brought him to the ground. Immediately the others seized him by the feet, and dragged him away, and then men, rushing to the shore, discharged their arrows at the boats. The boats had grounded upon a sand-bank: this unexpected attack dismayed the Portuguese; they thought rather of escape than of vengeance, till remembering at length that the best means of securing themselves was by displaying their power, they discharged four guns at the savages, who then fled to the hills. Meantime the women had dragged the body thither; they cut it in pieces, held up the mutilated limbs in mockery to the boats, broiled them over a huge fire which had been prepared as it seemed for that purpose, and with loud rejoicings devoured them in sight of the Portuguese, to whom they intimated by signs, that they had, in like manner, eaten their two countrymen. At this abominable sight, forty of the crew would have landed to revenge their comrades, but they were not permitted to make the attempt."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 24.

† Supposed to have been D. Gonsalo Coelho.

terms with the natives, and then returned to Lisbon, laden with Brazil-wood, monkeys, and parrots, leaving behind them twenty-four men, who had been saved from the wreck of the commander's vessel. Thus was formed the first settlement in this country.

The Brazil-wood had now acquired such repute in Europe, that the holy name of Vera Cruz, which Cabral had given to the country, soon became lost in the denomination which it universally received, of the Brazil, or the Brazil-wood country. Other navigators were now sent to explore the coasts, and settlements were formed in different parts. But, as the country was not known to abound with the precious metals, or to afford any article of commerce worthy of the attention of a government whose coffers were overflowing with the riches of Africa and the East, it was in a short time abandoned altogether to the speculations of private adventurers. A contract was granted for the Brazil-wood, and the colony began to be frequently visited by the caravels of the contractors, while persons were found willing to reside there as their agents. But the slender profits which could be realised by this article of commerce, (the only one, except parrots, which Brazil at this time yielded,) were an inadequate compensation for the formidable dangers to which the settlers were exposed. The harmony and good understanding which marked the first interviews between the natives and the Portuguese, were not of long continuance. The former found little reason to congratulate themselves on these new neighbours, and passing, with the impetuosity of savage minds, from the extreme of a blind attachment to that of hatred and vengeance,—not, however, it may be suspected, without provocation,—they commenced a furious warfare on the European settlements. The Portuguese were not always victorious, and for those who fell into the hands of the enemy, a fate was reserved at

which humanity shudders. Such occurrences soon put an end to voluntary emigration to Brazil. All who pursued the prizes of wealth and ambition, crowded to the more splendid theatre of India, every region of which was then the scene of Portuguese triumphs; and Brazil seemed likely to revert to its original state of barbarism. At this crisis, the government, whether from the wish to turn to some account an acquisition hitherto unprofitable, or from the inconvenient increase of convicts in the mother country, consequent on the recent establishment of the Inquisition, adopted the scheme of commuting the punishment of death for banishment to this colony, thus making it the Botany Bay of Portugal. The system was not very favourable to the moral respectability of the settlements; nor is it surprising that the savages soon lost all awe and veneration for those whom they had at first regarded as beings of a superior race. The new settlers, by whom the population of Brazil was gradually augmented, rendered desperate by their situation, if not already hardened by crime, were well fitted to contend with the dangers and difficulties that awaited them. In the bloody conflicts which ensued with the exasperated natives, they committed atrocities not perhaps surpassed in enormity by those which attended the conquest of Mexico and Peru by the Spaniards. On storming a village, it is stated to have been their regular practice, to massacre the old men and children, and to carry the rest into slavery.

In the mean time, Amerigo Vespucci had returned to the service of the king of Castile, who, deeming himself entitled to take possession of that part of the coast which this great navigator had surveyed while under the Portuguese flag, but which did not appear to be appropriated, sent out Don Juan de Solis, in 1509, on a new voyage of discovery, accompanied with the celebrated pilot, Vicente Yanez Pinzon. The king of Portugal remonstrated against

this proceeding as an intrusion upon his share of the division of undiscovered countries, which the infamous Pope Alexander VI. had artfully assigned to the two nations. That pontiff had, by virtue of his pretended dominion over all the kingdoms of the earth, granted to Ferdinand and Isabella, in full right, all the countries inhabited by infidels, which they had discovered or should discover; while on the crown of Castile, he had conferred vast regions with the situation of which he was unacquainted. To prevent these grants from clashing, he appointed that an imaginary line from pole to pole, a hundred leagues to the westward of the Azores, should serve as a limit between them; in the plenitude of his power bestowing all to the east of this line upon the Portuguese, and all to the west of it upon the Spaniards. The remonstrance of the court of Lisbon appears to have had some effect; for, on the return of De Solis and Pinzon in consequence of some disputes which had arisen between them on the voyage, the intention of the king of Castile was relinquished. It was not till seven years afterwards that De Solis was sent on a second voyage; and then it was with the avowed purpose of ascertaining the communication with the Pacific Ocean by the westward, which had been discovered by the unfortunate Balboa two years before. On this voyage, De Solis, who was acknowledged to be one of the most skilful navigators living, standing along the coast of Brazil, came to the fine harbour now called Rio de Janeiro. He proceeded southward to a spacious bay, which he supposed to be the entrance into a strait that communicated with the Indian ocean; but, upon advancing further, he found it to be the estuary of the Rio de la Plata. With this important discovery, the career of this enterprising navigator was doomed to terminate. In endeavouring to make a descent on the coast, De Solis and several of his crew were slain by the natives, who, in sight of the ships,

cut their bodies in pieces, roasted, and devoured them.* Discouraged by the loss of their commander, the surviving Spaniards set sail for Europe, without aiming at any further discovery. The king of Portugal claimed their cargoes, and remonstrated so effectually against the interference of Spain, that when Magalhaens, three years afterwards, touched at Rio de Janeiro, he would purchase nothing of the natives but provisions.

Meanwhile the French had formed settlements on the northern part of the coast of Brazil; and when the Portuguese commander, Christovam Jacques, entered the bay which he named All Saints,† he found there two French ships laden with Brazil-wood, which he engaged, and, after a spirited defence, destroyed.

The first settler in Bahia was Diogo Alvarez, whose history, as detailed by Mr. Southey, is romantically interesting.

"He was a native of Viana, young and of noble family, who, with that spirit of enterprise which was then common among his countrymen, embarked to seek his fortune in strange countries. He was wrecked upon the shoals on the north of the bar of Bahia. Part of the crew were lost, others escaped that mode of death to suffer one

* "The natives invited him to shore, and he landed with a boat's crew, intending to catch one of them, and carry him to Spain. Their intention was worse than his, and better executed. They had stationed a party in ambush, who rose suddenly upon the crew, seized the boat, broke it to pieces in an instant, and slew every man with clubs: then they took the bodies upon their shoulders, carried them to a spot which was out of the reach of the Spaniards, but within sight, and there dismembered, roasted, and devoured them. The scene of this tragedy was on the north shore, between Monte Video and Maldonado, near a rivulet, which still bears the name of Solis."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 35.

† Where Bahia or St. Salvador now stands. The port discovered and named All Saints by Vespucci, is supposed by some to be further northward.

more dreadful; the natives seized and ate them. Diogo saw that there was no other possible chance of saving his life, than by making himself as useful as possible to these cannibals. He therefore exerted himself in recovering things from the wreck, and by such exertions succeeded in conciliating their favour. Among other things, he was fortunate enough to get on shore some barrels of powder and a musket, which he put in order at his first leisure, after his masters were returned to their village: and one day, when the opportunity was favourable, brought down a bird before them. The women and children shouted Caramuru! Caramuru! which signified a man of fire; and they cried out that he would destroy them: but he told the men, whose astonishment had less of fear mingled with it, that he would go with them to war, and kill their enemies. Caramuru was the name which from thence-forward he was known by. They marched against the Tapuyas; the fame of this dreadful engine went before them, and the Tapuyas fled. From a slave, Caramuru became a sovereign: the chiefs of the savages thought themselves happy, if he would accept their daughters to be his wives. He fixed his abode upon the spot where Villa Velha was afterwards erected, and soon saw as numerous a progeny as an old patriarch's rising round him. The best families in Bahia trace their origin to him.

"At length a French vessel came into this bay, and Diogo resolved to take that opportunity of once more seeing his native country. He loaded her with brazil, and embarked with his favourite wife, Paraguaza—the Great River. The other wives could not bear this abandonment, though it was only to be for a time; some of them swam after the ship, in hopes of being taken on board, and one followed it so far, that before she could reach the shore again, her strength failed, and she sunk. They were received with signal honour at the court of France. Para-

guaza was baptised by the name of Catharina Alvarez, after the queen of Portugal, and the king and queen were her sponsors. Her marriage was then celebrated. Diogo would fain have proceeded to Portugal, but the French would not permit him to go there: the honours which they had shewn him were not to be gratuitous, and they meant to make him of use to them in his own dominions. By means, however, of Pedro Fernandez Sardinha, (then a young man, who had just completed his studies in Paris, and afterwards the first bishop of Brazil,) he sent the information to Joam III., which he was not permitted to carry, and exhorted the king to colonise the delightful province in which his own lot had been so strangely cast. After some time, he covenanted with a wealthy merchant to take him back, and leave him the artillery and ammunition of two ships, with store of such things as were useful for traffic with the natives, in return for which he undertook to load both vessels with brazil. The bargain was fairly performed, and Diogo having returned to his territories, fortified his little capital." *

The Portuguese government had continued to neglect their transatlantic possessions, and Brazil was "left open like a common." For more than thirty years after its discovery, the attempts to colonise it had been of the feeblest description. But, at length, the progress of French merchants in forming settlements on the coast, and of the Spaniards in establishing colonies on the banks of the Paraguay, alarmed the Portuguese court for the security of their western colonies, and a plan was formed to people the coast with European residents. To favour this project, the country was divided into hereditary captaincies *(capitanias)*, each containing about fifty leagues of coast, which were bestowed by king John upon such grandees

* Southey's History of Brazil, vol. i. p. 38.

as had distinguished themselves by their services to the crown, and were willing to embark in the adventure. They were either to go in person, or to send colonists at their own expense; and in return, they were invested with an uncontrolled authority and jurisdiction, both civil and criminal, over their respective territories. The first person who took possession of one of these captaincies was Martim Affonso de Sousa, to whom was given, in 1531, a considerable tract of country contiguous to St. Vincente.* Pedro Lopez de Sousa, his brother, had his fifty leagues in two allotments: one part, St. Amaro, was immediately to the north of St. Vincente; the other, Itamarica, was situated at a considerable distance, not far from Pernambuco. Joam de Barros, the celebrated historian, obtained the captaincy of Maranham. Pernambuco became the portion of Duarte Coelho Pereira. The lands adjacent to the southern Paraiba river were conceded to Pedro de Goes. The country between the great river St. Francisco, which was the southern boundary of Pernambuco and Bahia, was allotted to Francisco Pereira Coutinho. The next portion of territory, proceeding southward, was denominated the capitania dos Ilheos, running north and south from the Rio dos Ilheos: it was granted to Jorge Figueiredo Correa. Cabral's Porto Seguro was included in the range of coast which formed the capitania of the same name, and was a donation to Pedro Campo Tourinha. Espiritu Santo was the appellation given to the next in rotation, and obtained by Vasco Fernandez Coutinho.

* "Martim Affonso de Sousa and his brother fitted out a considerable armament, and went to form their settlement in person. He began to survey the coast somewhere about Rio de Janeiro, to which he gave that name, because he discovered it on the 1st of January; and he proceeded south as far as the Plata, naming the places which he surveyed upon the way, according to the days on which the several discoveries were made."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 41.

Brazil may therefore be considered as having been colonised on the principle of the feudal system. Few of the settlements were founded immediately by the Crown, and the lords proprietors enjoyed almost all the regal rights, save that of issuing a coinage: they made war or peace with the chiefs of the Brazilian tribes, they issued laws, and they imposed taxes. This mode of allotment, however, as might have been expected, was attended by serious evils. An authority so absolute was inevitably abused by the desperate adventurers to whom its administration was confided; and complaints of their conduct became at length so frequent as to afford the Government a fair pretext for revoking the powers conferred on the several proprietors, by which, in fact, the settlements had been alienated from the Crown. They were left, however, in full possession of their grants in other respects. A governor-general was now appointed, with full authority civil and criminal; and he was sent out with instructions to build and fortify a city, which was to be called St. Salvador. Thome de Souza, a fidalgo, was the individual selected for this high station: he arrived at the *Bahia de todos os Santos* (Bay of All Saints), in April 1549, accompanied with six Jesuits, the first who had ever set foot in the New World. Among them was Father Manoel de Nobrega, a man whose memory deserves to be held by the Brazilians in everlasting honour.*

The appointment of the governor-general has been by

* Nobrega was the contemporary of St. Francis Xavier, and his rival in disinterested exertions for the good of his fellow-creatures. He has been termed the Apostle of Brazil. He was of a noble Portuguese family, but, disappointed of some collegiate honour, to which he thought he had a better claim than the successful candidate, he had renounced the world in a fit of disgust, little aware that that step would lead to his acting a more prominent and important part than, with all his talents and fair prospects, would otherwise have been within his reach.

some writers ascribed to a somewhat different cause than the complaints made to the Portuguese government of the misconduct of the colonial proprietors.* In 1548, great numbers of Jews had been stripped of their possessions in Portugal by the Inquisition, and banished to Brazil. Here, however, they were not entirely forsaken; many of them found friends, or, being known as men of probity, obtained advances of money from merchants with whom they had had previous transactions. By such assistance they were enabled to procure sugar-canes from the island of Madeira, and to form plantations. Sugar, which till then had been used only in medicine, became an article of luxury, and the increasing demand for it proved highly favourable to the colonists, enabling them to extend their plantations. The court of Lisbon began to be sensible that a colony might be beneficial to the mother country, without producing either gold or silver; and hence, the appointment of a governor-general was determined upon. It must, however, be observed, that the appointment of De Souza in 1549, could not be occasioned by consequences resulting from the banishment of the Jews from Portugal in 1548.

When De Souza arrived at Bahia, he found old Caramuru quietly settled there. This person was of great use to the Portuguese, in establishing a friendly understanding between them and the Indians, by whom they were assisted in building the town. Within four months, a hundred houses were erected, a cathedral was begun, batteries were planted, commanding both sea and land, and a mud wall was built to defend the new town from any sudden attacks from the natives. While the works were going forward, one of the Europeans was killed by a native. The governor demanded the offender, who had been

* See Rees's Cyclopedia; and Encycl. Britannica. Art. *Brazil.*

manifestly the aggressor; he was given up to justice by his tribe, and Souza's first act of judicial authority was, to have him blown to pieces from the mouth of a cannon. Supplies of all kinds were received the next year from the mother country; and the year after, several young females, orphans of noble families, were sent out by the queen to be given in marriage to the officers, with dowries in kine, brood-mares, and negroes, from the property of the Crown. This was the first royal settlement; and its prosperity was attended with considerable advantages to all the other captaincies. De Souza, however, did not bring a sufficient force to terminate the disorders, and repress the insubordination which had begun to prevail. By building St. Salvador, he gave a centre to the colony; but the honour of settling and extending it, and of making it really useful to the mother country, was reserved for the Jesuits who accompanied him. These men, who, for their arts of insinuation and address, have been equalled by none, dispersed themselves among the Indians, and seeming to be inspired only with sentiments of peace and charity, succeeded in conciliating their confidence and attachment. The obstacles which they had to encounter in the work of civilisation, were most formidable; but their zeal and assiduity rose with the difficulty of the enterprise, and the most salutary effects resulted from their exertions. They began by instructing the children of the natives, teaching them the Portuguese language; and thus, while they fitted them to become interpreters, they acquired theirs.* The greatest obstacle they had to sur-

* "Nobrega had a school near the city, where he instructed the native children, the orphans from Portugal, and the mestizos or mixed breed, here called Mamalucos. Reading, writing, and arithmetic were taught them: they were trained to assist at mass, and to sing the church service, and were frequently led in procession through the town. This had a great effect, for the natives were passionately

mount, arose from the cannibal propensities of the natives. In feasts of this horrid description, their pride, their religion, their greatest luxury, were all implicated. The missionaries resolved to conquer this diabolical habit; but, though they succeeded in putting down drunkenness, in healing inveterate feuds, in making a man content with one wife, the delight of feasting on the flesh of their enemies was too great to be relinquished; this propensity they could not overcome *. In these laudable exertions, the

fond of music—so passionately, that Nobrega began to hope the fable of Orpheus was a type of his mission, and that by songs he was to convert the Pagans of Brazil. He usually took with him four or five of these little choristers on his preaching expeditions: when they approached an inhabited place, one carried the crucifix before them, and they entered singing the litany. The savages, like snakes, were won by the voice of the charmer: they received him joyfully, and when he departed with the same ceremony, the children followed the music. He set the catechism, creed, and ordinary prayers to sol, fa; and the pleasure of learning to sing was such a temptation, that the little Tupis sometimes ran away from their parents to put themselves under the care of the Jesuits." —*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 267.

* "A Jesuit one day found a Brazilian woman in extreme old age, and almost at the point of death. Having catechised her, instructed her, as he conceived, in the nature of Christianity, and completely taken care of her soul, he began to inquire whether there was any kind of food which she could take? 'Grandam,' said he, 'if I were to get you a little sugar now, or a mouthful of some of our nice things which we bring from beyond sea, do you think you could eat it?' 'Ah, my grandson,' said the old convert, 'my stomach goes against every thing. There is but one thing which I fancy I could touch. If I had the little hand of a little tender Tapuya boy, I think I could pick the little bones; but woe is me, there is no body to go out and shoot one for me!'"—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 232.

"One day, they heard the uproar and rejoicing of the savages at one of these sacrifices: they made way into the area just when the prisoner had been felled, and the old women were dragging his body to the fire. They forced the body from them, and in the presence of the whole clan, who stood astonished at their courage, carried it off. The women soon roused the warriors to revenge this insult,

Jesuits were, however, every where opposed by the priests who had already settled in the country. Their interests were at stake; for the missionaries performed all the ceremonies of religion gratuitously, from which the priests derived their support. They had maintained that it was lawful to enslave the Indians, because they were beasts, although their own manners were not less dissolute than those of the savages; and they hated the Jesuits, who sought to falsify their representation by instructing and humanising the natives.

The first Brazilian bishop was appointed in 1552. In the following year, Thome de Souza, having now been governor-general for four years, was recalled at his own request. His successor, D. Duarte da Costa, was accompanied by the celebrated Anchieta and six other Jesuits; and a college was soon afterwards established in the plains of Piratininga (now St. Paul's), a secluded and beautiful spot about ten leagues from the sea, and thirteen from St. Vincente.* A misunderstanding arising between the

and by the time the fathers had secretly interred the corpse, the savages were in search of them. The governor received timely intelligence, and sent in haste to call the Jesuits from the mud hovel which they inhabited, upon the spot whereon their magnificent college was afterwards erected. When the savages had searched here in vain, they were on the point of attacking the city; the governor was obliged to call out his whole force, and partly by the display of fire-arms, and partly by fair words, he induced them to retire."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 263.

* A century afterwards, when a road had been made in the best direction, Vasconcellos thus describes it: "The greater part of the way you have not to travel, but to get on with hands and feet by the roots of trees, and this among such crags and precipices, that I confess, the first time I went there, my flesh trembled when I looked down. The depth of the valleys is tremendous; and the number of mountains, one above another, seem to leave no hope of reaching the end:—when you fancy you are at the summit of one, you find yourself at the foot of another of no less magnitude,—and this in the beaten and chosen way! True it is, that from time to time the labour of the ascent is recompensed; for when I seated

bishop and the new governor, the former embarked for Portugal with the intention of stating his grievance to the king, but was wrecked on the coast, and, together with a hundred Europeans, was murdered by the Cahetes. The revenge taken by the Portuguese was horrible. The Cahetes were condemned with all their posterity to perpetual slavery; they were hunted, slaughtered, and almost exterminated.

Da Costa was replaced, in 1558, by Mem da Sa, a man of enlightened mind and humane principles. On his arrival, he immediately set himself to work to reclaim the allied Indians from their brutal propensities; and to shew them, at the same time, that they might expect justice from the laws, he issued an order that all who had been wrongfully enslaved should be set at liberty. One powerful colonist who refused to comply with this edict, had his house levelled to the ground by the governor's orders. The Indians too had soon a proof that the edict prohibiting their cannibal feasts would be summarily enforced.

"Three friendly Indians were seized, when fishing, by their enemies, carried off, and devoured. The governor sent to the offending tribe, commanding them to give up the criminals that they might be put to death. The chiefs would have consented, but the persons implicated were powerful; the adjoining clans made a common cause with them; two hundred hordes who dwelt upon the banks of the Paraguazu, united in defence of their favourite custom;

myself upon one of these rocks, and cast my eyes below, it seemed as though I were looking down from the heaven of the moon, and that the whole globe of earth lay beneath my feet,—a sight of rare beauty, for the diversity of prospect both of sea and land, plains, forests, and mountain tracks, all various and beyond measure delightful. This ascent, broken with shelves of level, continues till you reach the plains of Piratininga, in the second region of the air, where it is so thin, that it seems as if they who newly arrive there could never breathe their fill."

and the answer returned was, that if the governor wanted the offenders, he must come and take them. This, in despite of the opposition made by the settlers, he resolved to do. The allied natives took the field with them, with a Jesuit at their head, and a cross for their standard. They found the enemy well posted, and in considerable strength, but they put them to flight. After the battle, it was discovered that an arm had been cut off from one of the dead: as this was evidently taken by one of the allies to eat in secret, proclamation was made, that that arm must be laid by the body, before the army took food, or rested after the battle. The next morning the enemy were pursued, and suffered a second and more severe defeat, after which they delivered up the criminals, and petitioned to be received as allies upon the same terms as the other tribes."

Mem da Sa had soon to turn his attention to a foreign enemy. Nicholas Durand de Villegagnon, a native of Provence, and a knight of Malta, a man high in the French naval service, had taken possession of one of the islands in the bay of Rio de Janeiro, for the avowed purpose of founding there an asylum for the persecuted Hugonots of France. For this specious project he had obtained the powerful patronage of Admiral de Coligny, and by this means had secured a number of respectable colonists. The French court was disposed to view with no small satisfaction the plan of founding a colony after the example of the Spaniards and Portuguese. Having landed, he had begun to build a fort, which he called Fort Coligny; and although the whole territory of which he had gained possession, consisted of an island about a mile in circumference, the continent was already honoured with the name of Antarctic France. On the return of the vessels to Europe for a fresh cargo of Protestants, a considerable zeal was immediately kindled for the establishment of the reformed

religion in these remote regions; and the Church of Geneva took that interest in the project, that two ministers and fourteen students from that city determined to brave all the hardships of an unknown climate and a new mode of life in the cause. They repaired to the seat of Admiral de Coligny, near Chatillon sur l'Oing, where they were received with the highest respect; and through the influence of the admiral, added to the uneasy situation of those of the reformed faith in France, their numbers were soon swelled, new recruits continually presenting themselves as they proceeded on their road to the coast. Their departure was hastened by an adventure of no agreeable nature. At Harfleur, the catholic inhabitants, instigated by the most furious intolerance, rose in arms against them, and a desperate conflict ensued, in which one of their best officers was killed, and the rest owed their safety to a precipitate retreat. On their passage, they suffered from a violent storm; and when, after a tedious voyage, they arrived off the coast of Brazil, they had a slight encounter with the Portuguese at Espiritu Santo. At length, they reached the settlement of their countrymen at Rio de Janeiro, where they were received at first with apparent cordiality. "But," says Mr. Southey, "Villegagnon was a villain." When it suited his views, he threw off the mask, and those who had come to Antarctic France to enjoy liberty of conscience, found themselves brought under a worse yoke than that from which they had fled. "They therefore," continues Mr. Southey, "demanded leave to return, and he gave written permission to the master of a ship to carry them to France. When they got on board, the vessel was found to be in such a state, that five of the party went again ashore, rather than put to sea in her. Jean de Lery was one of the others, who thought death better than this man's cruelty, and pursued their voyage. After having endured the utmost misery of famine, they

reached Hennebonne.* Villegagnon had given them a box of letters wrapt in sere-cloth, as was then the custom; among them was one directed to the chief magistrates of whatever port they might arrive at, in which this worthy friend of the Guises denounced the men whom he had invited out to Brazil to enjoy the peaceable exercise of the reformed religion, as heretics worthy of the stake. The magistrates of Hennebonne happened to favour the Reformation, and thus the devilish malignity of Villegagnon was frustrated, and his treachery exposed. Of the five who had feared to trust themselves in a vessel so badly stored, and so unfit for the voyage, three were put to death by this persecutor. Others of the Hugonots fled from him to the Portuguese, where they were compelled to apostatise, and profess a religion which they despised as much as they hated."

* One of these unfortunate persons thus describes the sufferings they endured. "After having devoured," says he, "all the leather in our vessel, even to the covering of the trunks, we thought ourselves approaching to the last moment of our life; but necessity suggested to some one the idea of pursuing the rats and mice, and we had the greater hope of taking them easily, because, having no more crumbs, nor any thing to devour, they ran in great numbers, dying of hunger, through the vessel. We pursued them so carefully, and by so many kind of snares, that very few remained. Even in the night we sought them, with our eyes open, like rats. A rat was more valued than an ox on land. The price rose so high as four crowns. We boiled them in water, with all the intestines, which were eaten as well as the body. The paws were not omitted, nor the other bones, which we found means to soften. The extremity was such, that nothing remained but Brazil-wood, the driest of all woods, which many, however, in their despair, attempted to chew. Carguilleray du Pont, our leader, holding out one day a piece in his mouth, said to me with a deep sigh, 'Alas, my friend, I have due to me in France the sum of four thousand livres; and would to God, that, after giving a discharge for the whole, I held in my hand a pennyworth of bread, and a single glass of wine!'" Several died of hunger; and they had begun to form the resolution of devouring each other, when land appeared in view.

The attention of the Portuguese government was by this time roused to the importance of taking possession of this fine port, and effectually colonising it. The nephew of Mem da Sa was accordingly despatched to Bahia for such assistance as might enable him to extirpate the French. An expedition was fitted out, consisting of two ships of war and eight or nine merchantmen, and the governor took the command in person, accompanied by the Jesuit Nobrega.

"Early in January 1560, they reached Rio de Janeiro. The governor's intention was, to enter in the dead of the night, and surprise the island; they were espied by the centinels, and obliged to anchor off the bar. The French immediately made ready for defence, forsook their ships, and with eight hundred native archers retired to their forts. Mem da Sa now discovered that he was in want of canoes and small craft, and of men who knew the harbour. Nobrega was sent to St. Vincente to solicit this aid from the inhabitants; he performed his commission with his usual skill, and soon despatched a good brigantine, canoes, and boats laden with stores, and manned by Portuguese, Mamalucos, and natives—men who knew the coast, and were inured to warfare with the Tupinambas and Tamoyos. Five Jesuits conducted the reinforcement. With this succour Mem da Sa entered the port, and won the landing-place of the island. Two days and nights they vainly battered fortresses whose walls and bulwarks were of solid rock; thus uselessly they expended all their powder and ball, many of their people were wounded, and they were about to reimbark their artillery, and retreat. But though they had hitherto displayed little skill in directing their attacks, there was no lack of courage in the Portuguese, and the shame of returning from a bootless expedition provoked them to one desperate exertion. They assaulted and won the largest of the outworks which

commanded the landing, then they stormed the rock in which the magazine had been excavated, and carried that also. This so intimidated the French, that, in the ensuing night, they and the Tamoyos abandoned the other posts, and got into their boats and fled, some to the ships, some to the main land."*

As this action took place on St. Sebastian's day (Jan. 20), the governor named the place St. Sebastian, in honour as well of the patron-saint as of the young King of Portugal, who bore that name. Here Mem da Sa founded the city, upon which he bestowed the same appellation, but which is now almost universally called Rio de Janeiro. The whole of the works were completed by the Indians under the Jesuits, without any expense whatever to the state. In the midst of the city he assigned the company ground for a college. The donation was ratified at Lisbon the ensuing year.

Scarcely had Mem da Sa succeeded in driving out the French, when he was called upon to combat with a new enemy. The Aymores, or Botucodoes, of all the Brazilian tribes the most savage and formidable,† infested the Ilheos and Porto Seguro, and threatened the capital itself. With

* Southey's History, vol. i. p. 292. The French subsequently attempted to form settlements in Pernambuco and Paraiba, but were prevented in every instance.

† "Their mode of warfare was as savage as their habits of life; they had no chief or leader; they never went in large companies; they never stood up against an enemy face to face, but lay in wait like wild beasts, and took their deadly aim from the thickets. In one point they were greatly inferior to the other tribes; for, being an inland people, they could not swim, and such was their ignorance, or dread of the water, that any stream which they could not ford was considered a sufficient defence against them. It may well be supposed that such men would be impatient of slavery; some who were taken by the Portuguese, refused to eat, and died by that slowest and most resolute mode of suicide."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 295.

the assistance of his Indian allies, the governor succeeded in subduing them. But other Indian tribes continually molested the settlers, and the influence of the Jesuits over the natives alone saved the colonists from extermination.

"The English," Mr. Southey states, "were at this time endeavouring to establish themselves in Brazil; and choosing their position better than the French, though not with better fortune, they fixed themselves in considerable numbers at Paraiba do Sul. There they connected themselves with the native women; and in another generation, the Anglo-Tupi Mamalucos might have been found dangerous neighbours, if the governor of St. Sebastian's, steadily pursuing the system of his court, had not, in the fifth year of their abode, attacked and exterminated them. They who escaped from the merciless war which the Portuguese waged against all interlopers, fled into the interior, and either they were eaten by the savages, as was believed, or lived and died among them, becoming savages themselves."

Mem da Sa had continued to sustain the government of Brazil for an unusually long period, when D. Luiz de Vasconcellos was appointed to succeed him. A considerable number of Jesuits, headed by F. Ignacio de Azevedo, were sent out with the new governor. The fleet in which they sailed, encountered, in separate divisions, several French and English ships; Luiz de Vasconcellos fell in an action with the latter off Tercera, and the Jesuits were butchered by a French pirate, named Jacques Sore. One only escaped, in a lay habit. Nobrega did not live to hear the fate of his brethren. Prematurely worn out by incessant fatigue, he closed a life of unexampled exertion and heroic virtue at the age of fifty-three.* Luiz de Almeida was

* "The day before he died, he went abroad, and took leave of all his friends, as if he were about to undertake a long journey.

appointed governor in the place of the unfortunate Vasconcellos. Mem da Sa lived to welcome him on his arrival, and then died, after an able and prosperous administration of fourteen years.

The growth of the colony had been so rapid, that when Luiz de Brito succeeded De Almeida as governor, it was deemed advisable to divide the country into two governments, all the districts southward of Porto Seguro being included in the division of which Rio de Janeiro was made the capital. This arrangement being soon found productive of inconvenience, the two parts were re-united in 1578, under the administration of D. Diogo Lourenzo da Veiga,—the fatal year in which Sebastian, King of Portugal, was cut off, with the whole flower of his nobility, in his expedition against the Moors. Brazil, in consequence of this disastrous event, passed with the mother country under the dominion of Spain, in which state it continued for about sixty years. Philip II. offered all the Brazilian colonies, in absolute sovereignty, with the title of king, to the Duke of Braganza, on condition of his relinquishing his claim to the Portuguese crown, but he declined the insidious offer. Neither was Philip, however, when he made the proposal, nor Braganza when he refused it, aware of the importance of the country, which was destined, two hundred years after, to afford an asylum to the court of Lisbon, and subsequently to eclipse, as an independent empire, the mother country itself.

At this period, Bahia, Pernambuco, and Rio de Janeiro, were in a very flourishing condition. The mud dwellings of the early settlers had given way to well-built houses; residences of a superior description had been erected for the accommodation of persons in authority, and

They asked him whither he was going? His reply was—'*Home*, to my own country.'"

for the purposes of commerce, and improvements in the arts had been to some extent introduced from Europe. But the transfer of the crown into foreign hands materially changed the aspect of affairs in Brazil. The Spaniards took little interest in a country so inferior, as was then supposed, in mineral wealth, to their own colonies on the western coast. By the unfortunate subjection of Portugal to Spain, her colonies were moreover involved in hostilities with England, whose merchants had commenced trading to Brazil.* Two English vessels trading peaceably to San Vincente, were attacked, in the harbour, by three Spanish ships. The attack began in the evening, and continued as long as the moon gave them light, by which time one of the Spanish vessels was sunk,† and on the following morning the British captain put to sea.

* "The first Englishman who is mentioned as having traded to this country, is Master Wm. Hawkins, of Plymouth, father of Sir John Hawkins, 'a man much esteemed by King Henry VIII., as a principal sea captain. He armed a ship of his own, of 250 tons, called the Paul of Plymouth, wherewith he made two voyages to Brazil, one in 1530, and the other in 1532; in the first of which he brought a Brazilian King, as they termed him, to present him in his wild accoutrements to King Henry,—at the sight of whom the king and all the nobility did not a little marvail, and not without cause.' One Martin Cockeram, of Plymouth, was left behind in pledge for him. The Brazilian remained nearly twelve months in England, and died on his passage home, which was feared would turn to the loss of the life of Martin Cockeram, his pledge. Nevertheless, the savages being fully persuaded of the honest dealing of our men toward their prince, restored him without any harm." *Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 373.

† "By reason," says Lopez Vaz, "that these ships were weakened with former tempests, and were manned with the refuse of all the Spanish fleet, (the sicke men and women being embarked therein,) the Englishmen easily put them to the worst, and sunk one of them, and might also have sunk another, if they had been so minded; but they desired not the destruction of any man: and doubtless it is the greatest valour that any man can shew, that when he may do hurt, he will not."

This was the first act of hostility committed by the English in Brazil; and in this instance they were not the aggressors. An expedition was subsequently fitted out by the Earl of Cumberland, and its instructions were not equally pacific. The fleet entered the Reconcave of Bahia, and plundered it, the city being preserved only by the Indian archers. Raleigh served in this expedition. Shortly afterwards, the celebrated Cavendish came to annoy their coast; but his conduct was that of a freebooter, and left a stain upon the character of his nation. The most remarkable expedition of the English to the coast of Brazil, was that of Sir James Lancaster to Pernambuco. This man had, by his own account, been brought up among the Portuguese, had lived among them as a gentleman, served with them as a soldier, and dwelt among them as a merchant; there was, therefore, "a kind of moral treason," Mr. Southey remarks, "in his bearing arms against a people with whom he had been so long domesticated." But he appears to have conducted himself with so much moderation and humanity as almost to deserve forgiveness for his treachery. Pernambuco was taken.

"Lancaster led the way," continues Mr. Southey; "the fort began to play upon them, and struck away great part of the ensign of the galley. They run her a-ground right under the battery, within a coit's cast of it; her back was broken with the shock, the sea made a breach over her, and she sunk instantly; the other boats did the like. There were seven brass guns in the fort, which the Portuguese pointed so steep downwards, that their shot was spent in the sand, only one man being wounded. Lancaster exulting at this, for a well-aimed discharge must have been murtherous, exclaimed, Upon them! Upon them! All by God's help is ours! They ran forward to storm the place; the Portuguese lost heart, retired into some near bushes, and being pursued, fled by

a way which is still dry, the tide not having reached it. Lancaster then made signal for the ships to enter: he left a garrison in the fort, planted its guns against Olinda, from which quarter he apprehended most danger, and marched to the base-town, as he calls Recife, which contained at that time rather more than a hundred houses. The people, at his approach, embarked in caravels and boats, and abandoned the place, leaving the rich lading of the carrack and great store of country produce to the conquerors." *

The whole and sole purpose of this voyage being plunder, when they had laden their vessels with every thing valuable they could procure, they set sail and reached home in safety. The success of Lancaster's enterprise would probably have encouraged our countrymen to undertake similar adventures, had not a more tempting lure been held out to them by Raleigh, in the fabulous city of gold, the El Dorado of which England dreamed.†

* Southey's History of Brazil, vol. i. p. 387.

† "This imaginary kingdom obtained the name of El Dorado, from the fashion of its lord, which has the merit of being in savage costume. His body was anointed every morning with a certain fragrant gum of great price, and gold dust was then blown upon him, through a tube, till he was covered with it: the whole was washed off at night. This the barbarian thought a more magnificent and costlier attire than could be afforded by any other potentate in the world; and hence the Spaniards called him El Dorado, or the Gilded One."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. ii. p. 394.

Among other descriptions of the capital of this imaginary country, is the following, which was communicated as certain intelligence by D. M. del Barco. "The palace," he says, "stood in a lake island. It was built of white stone; at the entrance were two towers, and between them a column five-and-twenty feet in height; on its top was a large silver moon, and two living lions were fastened to its base with chains of gold. Having passed by these keepers, you came into a quadrangle planted with trees, and watered by a silver fountain, which spouted through four golden pipes. The gate of

About this period, Roberto Diaz, a descendant of Caramuru, professed to have discovered in some part of Brazil, a rich mine of silver, which he offered to disclose on condition of being created a marquis. This demand Philip II. refused to grant, and the secret, if the man had one, died with him. In 1611, the French renewed their attempts to form a settlement on the coast, and they succeeded in establishing themselves in the island of Maranham. They were not dislodged till nine years afterwards, when a permanent Portuguese colony was planted there. But the evil days of Brazil were now drawing on, and the Portuguese, instead of extending their settlements in that country, were on the point of losing all that they possessed there. The intolerance and cruelty of Philip had involved him in a long and cruel war with Holland and the neighbouring provinces; and the efforts to which they had been impelled by their zeal in the cause of civil and religious liberty, had raised the Dutch to the first rank among maritime powers. The foreign possessions of the crown of Spain were of course considered as lawful prey; and having successfully attacked and enriched themselves from the Spanish colonies in the East, they now turned their attention towards America. In 1621, was formed the Dutch West India Company, which was invested, like all the commercial bodies established at that period for similar undertakings, with exclusive privileges, in consideration of which they undertook to carry on the concerns of war, as well as of trade, in those remote regions. In 1624, they fitted out a considerable armament, under the command of Jacob Willekins, one of their most esteemed naval officers, and the famous Peter Heyne,

the palace was of copper; it was very small, and its bolt was received in the solid rock. Within, a golden sun was placed upon an altar of silver, and four lamps were kept burning before it day and night."

with instructions to begin their operations by an attack on the capital. The success of the expedition was prompt and complete. St. Salvador was taken almost without a struggle, and all the inhabitants either submitted, or fled. The Dutch soon shewed that their intention was not, like that of former invaders, plunder merely, but conquest, for they immediately set themselves to strengthen the walls. The Portuguese rallied at a village in the Reconcave, and hostilities were carried on with the greatest barbarity on both sides.* D. Marcos Teixeira, the bishop of St. Salvador, exchanged the episcopal for the military character, hoisted the crucifix for his standard, and, animated by an heroic spirit, rallied around him his clergy and others who were attached to him. His force soon amounted to fourteen hundred Portuguese, and two hundred and fifty Indians; and from defending himself, he was soon enabled to become the assailant. He began by cutting off the Dutch parties and detachments; he intercepted their supplies of provisions, prohibited the cultivation of sugar and tobacco, and at length succeeded in placing the city under a complete state of blockade. He died in consequence of the unusual fatigue he had undergone; but his death did not prevent his successors from persevering in the same system, which prepared the way for the events that followed. The Dutch were much weakened by the return of Willekins with his booty to Europe, and by the departure of Heyne on a fruitless expedition to Angola, together with the subsequent loss of their general, Hans Vandort, who fell into an ambush, and was killed. The

* "The Portuguese were said to have put an officer to death, whom they were sending to Pernambuco, because he had the *chiguas* or jiggers in his feet, and could not march fast enough for his conductors; and the Dutch, in revenge, drew out their prisoners, tied them to one another, and shot them."—*Southey's History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 486.

greatest exertions were in the mean time made in Spain to regain the city, and the most powerful armament that had ever crossed the line, consisting of forty sail and 8000 soldiers, under the command of D. Fabrique de Toledo,* arrived at Bahia early in 1626. The Dutch became an easy prey: they capitulated on condition of being sent to Holland with their personal baggage and sufficient arms to protect them on the voyage. The Spanish fleet returned to Europe in triumph.

The Dutch Company, eager to repair this loss and disgrace, soon projected new attempts on Brazil; but the deficiency of their resources compelled them to delay an expedition attended with such an enormous expense. Their cruisers, however, lay in wait for the Spanish and Portuguese merchantmen, as they returned from the East and West Indies, and with such success, that immense wealth was the result of this species of warfare.† Early in 1630, a new expedition, under the command of the Dutch admiral Hendrick Lonck, arrived off the coast of the fertile province of Pernambuco. Olinda, the capital, was taken by Wardenberg, who commanded the troops, after a feeble resistance on the part of Albuquerque, the governor: the neighbouring forts were defended more bravely. On abandoning the city, the Portuguese retired into the woods, where they took heart, and a severe and obstinate predatory warfare was carried on against the invaders from their camp of Bom Jesus;‡ but their efforts

* It is asserted in the Edinburgh Encyclopedia, that Osorio, Marquis of Valduesa, was the commander of this expedition. We have taken the authority of Mr. Southey.

† In thirteen years they had taken 545 vessels, the proceeds of which amounted to 7,500,000*l.*

‡ The Portuguese were warmly assisted by their Indian allies. The following anecdote of one of them records perhaps as powerful an instance of heroic virtue as the history of any country can produce. "An Indian, called Jagoarar by his countrymen, and

were rendered unavailing by desertion and treachery, and after a three months' siege, the camp surrendered, on condition of marching out with the honours of war, and being furnished with a free passage to the Indies.

The Portuguese thus saw this colony a second time on the point of being wrested from them, and they resolved to strain every nerve to recover it. They were again seconded, though more coldly than before, by Spain. A formidable armament was equipped, but an infectious disease seized the troops before their departure; two thousand perished, and the expedition was broken up. In the following year, the fleet was again assembled: it consisted of fifty-four vessels, the Portuguese having collected their whole naval force. The Dutch, not aware of the enemy, sailed from their harbours with only sixteen vessels. Accustomed, however, to despise the Portuguese, they hesitated not to engage even against such fearful odds; but they paid dear for their rashness. The admiral was blown up with his vessel; the second in command shared the same fate; yet, the bravery of the Dutch still saved them from a total defeat; and they made an admirable retreat to Olinda, carrying with them a Spanish

Simam Soares by the Portuguese, had lain eight years in irons at Rio Grande. His offence was, that he had gone over to the Dutch when they were in possession of St. Salvador, but he had protested that his only motive was to bring away his wife and child, who were by some accident in their power. The Portuguese wanted virtue to believe him; and notwithstanding he was the uncle of Camaram, their best ally, they had kept him eight years in this cruel confinement. The Dutch set him free. Immediately he went to his clan. The marks of my chains, said he, are still bleeding; but it is guilt which is infamous, and not punishment. The worse the Portuguese have used me, the more merit will be yours and mine in persisting faithfully to serve them, especially now that they are in distress. They listened to his persuasions, and he brought to the assistance of his oppressors, a body of constant allies, with whom he served them so well as to obtain, and deserve, an honourable name in history."

vessel as their prize. The Portuguese admiral derived no decisive result from his success. He contented himself with landing twelve hundred men to reinforce the Portuguese army under the command of Albuquerque, and having provided for the security of the capital, he again set sail for Europe. Another expedition, despatched the next year, under the command of Don Frederic de Toledo, was still less productive of serious injury to the enemy. The Dutch continued to make great progress in Brazil, notwithstanding the bravery of the Portuguese generals and the assistance they derived from their Indian allies; and at length, having completed, in three successive campaigns, the conquest of the provinces of Pernambuco, Paraiba, and Rio Grande, they were masters of all that part of Brazil which lies to the north of the river Francisco. These successes inspired the Dutch government with the hope that, by a great effort, they might complete and secure the conquest of Brazil. Count Maurice of Nassau, equally distinguished by birth and by his military talents, was judiciously selected as the commander of this expedition. He arrived at Pernambuco in October 1636, and joining his troops to those previously in Brazil, he entered the province of Seregippe, which had been hitherto untouched, defeated the Portuguese general Bagnuolo in several successive engagements, and finally made himself master of the capital and the whole province.* He then marched against the strong holds which the Portuguese still retained in the districts north of Olinda; these he successively reduced, and he obtained a voluntary submission from the still more northerly province of Siara, which was then almost entirely in the possession of the natives. Brazil, however, could not be considered as con-

* The whole military force of the Dutch in Brazil is stated to have amounted to only 6180 regulars, and about 1000 Indians.

quered till the Dutch were masters of the capital. Count Maurice accordingly marched to St. Salvador, and laid siege to it; but the Portuguese had omitted nothing to put it in a respectable state of defence. Three forts which defended the place, were carried by storm; but, on attempting to storm the city itself, the Dutch were repulsed with great loss; and on the arrival of a reinforcement from Portugal, Count Maurice found himself under the necessity of raising the siege.

In the following year (1639), extraordinary exertions were made by the court of Madrid to recover possession of the provinces they had lost. Forty-six vessels were despatched, with 5000 troops under D. Jorge de Mascarenhas, who was appointed governor, with the title of viceroy; but sickness attacked the fleet on the passage, half the number of troops perished, and the rest arrived at St. Salvador in a melancholy condition. Mascarenhas was able, however, to muster an army of 12,000 men, with whom he proceeded against Olinda. The Dutch were not ill-prepared to receive them, and a most furious engagement ensued, which lasted four days. * On the first day, the Dutch admiral, Loos, was killed; yet, victory remained on the side of the Dutch. In the end, the Portuguese fleet was entirely dispersed; great part of it perished upon rocks, and of that mighty armament, only six vessels returned to Spain, leaving the Dutch navy to ride triumphant in the bay of St. Salvador. Both parties, however, were so much weakened and tired by the calamities of so long a war, that a negotiation was entered into for a suspension

* A detachment of Portuguese troops took advantage of this diversion to enter Dutch Brazil, and being seconded by the natives, they gained considerable advantages, and committed great devastations; but were ultimately subdued and expelled by the Dutch. In this war, Cameram, the old ally of the Portuguese, greatly distinguished himself. His wife, who had received the Christian name and title of Donna Clara, fought by his side.

of hostilities. While this was pending, a revolution took place at home, which changed the Dutch from enemies into allies. In 1640, Portugal shook off the Spanish yoke, and once more saw a native sovereign of the house of Braganza seated on the throne of his ancestors. The preservation of the national independence now becoming the first object, it was necessary to postpone all attempt to recover possession of their colonies; and a treaty of peace and alliance was concluded between the two nations, on the 23d of June, 1641, in which it was stipulated, that the limits of Dutch and Portuguese Brazil should remain as they then stood.

Conceiving their possessions to be now secure, the thrifty republicans thought only of reducing the enormous expense of their colonial establishment, and Count Maurice was succeeded by a trusty board of commissioners, consisting of a merchant of Amsterdam, a jeweller of Haerlem, and a carpenter of Middleburg.* Under the system of retrenchment pursued by these wise men, the fortifications were neglected, the ammunition-stores were disposed of to the Portuguese, who were willing to purchase them at a high price, and a large proportion of the troops were permitted to return to Europe. After the departure of the governor, the tyranny of the Dutch became intolerable. The Portuguese and native Brazilians, on the one hand, hated their new masters equally as oppressors and as heretics; while they, on the other hand, seemed to consider the Pernambucans less as their subjects than their rivals in trade, and the most vexatious laws and regula-

* According to one account, Count Maurice was recalled, because, like Lord Wellesley when governor-general of India, he was deemed not sufficiently economical. Mr. Southey ascribes to him a prescience of the coming storm, and says, that he solicited his recal. After a residence of eight years in Brazil, he arrived in Holland in 1644.

tions were dictated by the narrow spirit of commercial jealousy. But the worst act of the Dutch authorities was, the passing of an edict which invited all slaves to give information against such of their masters as had concealed arms, with a promise of liberty for their reward. By this means, the lives of the Portuguese were placed at all times in the hands of their slaves, who had only to hide arms, and then inform against their masters, many of whom, there is room to believe, suffered torture or death without having been guilty of the crime alleged. The Portuguese began at length almost universally to rise against their oppressors, and a civil war was begun and carried on with great animosity on both sides, for some time under the singular circumstance of its being publicly disavowed by the government of the mother country, though secretly encouraged and supported by the Portuguese governor. In one memorable engagement with the Dutch, the patriots completely routed them, taking prisoners their two generals, Hans and Blaar.* The spirit and resolution with

* The two generals yielded themselves prisoners at the Casas de Dona Anna. "All they demanded was, that their lives should be spared; and they would fain have stipulated that the Indians in their service should be spared also. The Portuguese demurred at this; they regarded these people as rebels, and they were exasperated by the recent excesses which they had committed. The unhappy savages put an end to the discussion:—knowing how little mercy they could expect, they attacked their inexorable tyrants,—and when they were overpowered, no mercy was shewn. Every man was put to the sword. Cameram was related to their chief. The Christianity which he had been taught, did little toward abating the ferocity of his savage character;—his kinsman, in his judgement, deserved death doubly, as a rebel to his king and to his God; but that he might die with as much honour as possible, he put him to death with his own hand, and gave him decent burial; the bodies of the others being left to the beasts and birds. The number who were thus massacred, was about two hundred. One of the Indians having received a mortal wound, dropt, and lay like a corpse among the dead; but when the first Portuguese came within his

which the struggle was maintained for nearly ten years, were such as religion, combined with political hatred, would seem alone adequate to inspire.*

In the mean time, the Dutch government at home, engaged in a sanguinary contest with England for the sovereignty of the seas, were unable to take effective measures to secure their remote possessions. All their serious remonstrances to the court of Lisbon, were met with assurances and promises on the part of the king, and by advantageous treaties of commerce, they were pacified and lulled into security. In 1654, when the republic had concluded peace with England, and it had become evident that the amicable professions of the Portuguese monarch were wholly insincere, preparations were made to send out a considerable armament; but, in the midst of the arrangements for this purpose, tidings arrived, that their possessions in Brazil were no more. To the Pernambucans, assisted by the fleet of the new Brazilian company, is ascribed the honour of finally expelling the Dutch from that country. Olinda, the capital, was surrendered by Schouppe, the governor, on the 20th of January, 1654, without striking a blow, on condition of the garrison's marching out with all the honours of war, and a safe con-

reach, he sprang up with a dying effort, and stabbed him thrice, then fell and expired. The wives of these wretched Indians, beholding the slaughter, caught up their children, and dashed out their brains against the stones."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil,* vol. ii. p. 127.

* During this contest Cameram died, in whom the Portuguese lost a firm ally, and the Dutch were delivered by his death from an indefatigable enemy. His Indian name was *Poty* (the Prawn). He had been educated by the Jesuits, and could speak Portuguese well; but he always conversed with persons of rank and strangers through an interpreter, lest any defective pronunciation or impropriety of speech might seem to derogate from that dignity which it was his pride to preserve. It is remarkable that, often as he was in action, he scarcely ever received a wound.

duct being guaranteed to the Dutch, in returning in their own transports to Holland. All this was effected almost entirely by the exertions of private individuals, who sustained both the conflict and the cost of the war, without the aid, and at most with only the connivance of the Portuguese government. "From the hand of Joam Fernandez Vieira (the patriot general)," says his historian, "Francisco Baretto, the royal commander, received the keys of the city, and the crown of Portugal its empire of Brazil." Various attempts were made by the Dutch to regain a footing in Brazil by means of treaties, but they failed in every instance; and, at length, after hostilities had been carried on for six years, they were obliged to accept of the offer, on the part of Portugal, of a pecuniary compensation. A treaty was signed on the 10th of August, 1661, by which the whole of Brazil was finally ceded to the Portuguese; that power agreeing to pay in return, 8,000,000 of florins in sixteen instalments, and Dutch vessels being allowed to sail from Portugal to Brazil, and from Brazil to Portugal, importing and exporting all commodities whatsoever, with the single exception of Brazil-wood; a concession which ultimately proved of little value.

The obstinate manner in which the country had been contended for, enhanced, in the estimation of the Portuguese, the value of the possession. With this feeling, John IV. conferred on his son Theodosio, the title of Prince of Brazil, which has since been constantly borne by the heir apparent to the crown of Portugal.

While the northern maritime provinces were thus struggling against the Dutch, the Jesuits were establishing their dominion in Paraguay, and were endeavouring, though without success, to abolish, or at least to limit the slavery of the Indians. By these measures they had made themselves exceedingly unpopular. The Franciscans espe-

cially, and some other orders, who derived profit from the slave-trade, artfully fostered a general prejudice against them, spreading the report, that the Jesuits were in possession of gold and silver mines which they worked for their own advantage. The Jesuits in Brazil, who were devoted to the same cause, shared in the undeserved obloquy and prejudice excited against their brethren. Notwithstanding the many laws which had been passed for the protection of the natives, the landholders continued to enslave them, and the most disgraceful scenes took place in the different captaincies, which the governors were either unable or unwilling by their interference to prevent. "The Portuguese of Maranham and Para," says Mr. Southey, "were pursuing the same course of oppression, by which the Indians had been exterminated from the shores of the older captaincies. The laws allowed, that Indians taken in just war were slaves, and also those who, having been made prisoners in war with each other, had been purchased by the Portuguese: these latter, as having been destined to be eaten, were called Indians of the cord, in allusion to the *mussarama*. From hence all the immeasurable evils of a regular slave-trade necessarily arose. Every captain of a fort made war upon the nearest tribes whenever he chose, with or without a pretext, for the mere purpose of making slaves. The mode of purchasing, served even more easily to cover the most atrocious acts of violence. The traders returned with all they could seize by force or fraud,* presented them for the forms of examination as Cord-Indians, and compelled them by threats and torments to give such answers, as were readily accepted by judges who were themselves implicated in similar

* "One captain having got the chief of an Indian village in his power, fastened lighted fuses to each of his fingers, which were to burn there till he delivered himself from the torture, by giving a certain number of slaves."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. ii. p. 470.

transactions." Things were in this state when Vieyra the Jesuit arrived in Maranham. This extraordinary man immediately set himself to work to effect the abolition of this nefarious system, and he partially succeeded: for a time, the natives were restored to a state of comparative freedom. The most bitter and determined opponents of the Jesuits, were the Paulists, who, unwilling to resign the advantages they had reaped from their system of hunting for slaves, shewed even a disposition to depose the governor, Salvador Correa de Sae Benairdes, because he was the friend of the Jesuits.

About the conclusion of the Spanish war, an insurrection of an alarming nature broke out in the province of Maranham, at the head of which was Manoel Beckman, a native of Lisbon, but of foreign extraction. Two things, he said, were necessary for the salvation of the state,—the abolition of all monopolies, and the expulsion of the Jesuits. Having matured their plans, the insurgents surprised the town, and before day-break had made themselves masters of the whole city, the arsenal, and the fort, imprisoning the governor in his own house. When tidings of the insurrection reached Lisbon, Gomez Freyre was despatched to quell it, which he accomplished without difficulty, the insurgents making but a faint shew of resistance. Beckman, the ringleader, was taken, and some time afterwards executed. Under the new governor, Maranham, which had hitherto been the most lawless province in Brazil, enjoyed a season of comparative tranquillity.

But another revolt, of a much more formidable character, broke out in the province of Pernambuco in the year 1694. In the course of the contests with the Dutch, it had frequently been found necessary to put arms into the hands of the negroes, and they had become, in some degree, warlike and inured to discipline. In the confusion occasioned by the capture of Olinda, about forty made

their escape, and established themselves in a favourable situation on the frontier near Porto do Calvo. This became a rendezvous for all of their nation who could emancipate themselves from bondage, and their numbers soon became considerable. They supplied the want of wives, like the founders of Rome, by violence, sweeping the neighbouring plantations of every woman of colour. Equal laws, together with the possession of a fertile territory, and copious opportunities of plunder, caused their population to multiply with enormous rapidity. They soon erected themselves into a nation, assuming the name of the Palmarese,* under an elective monarch, named Zombi; and having procured supplies of arms and ammunition from the planters, they formed stockades of large trees round their capital and other towns. They remained unmolested for forty years, till at length, the population of their principal town amounted to not less than 20,000, and their power had attained a height which threatened the existence of the colony. In 1696, the Pernambucan government, seriously alarmed, determined on their extirpation, and 6000 men under D. John de Lancastro took the field against them. Unable to cope with so formidable a force, ten thousand of the Palmarese shut themselves up, with all their effects, in their capital, which is described as having possessed a certain degree of magnificence. The Portuguese immediately advanced to lay siege to it, but were dismayed at the formidable aspect of the works, for which they were quite unprepared, having made no adequate provision of artillery and supplies. The spirits of the invading army were still further damped by repeated and destructive sallies of the besiegers, and the Portuguese were repulsed with considerable loss by these warlike negroes, who employed

* Taking their name from the palm forests of the interior.

arrows, fire-arms, boiling water, and firebrands against the assailants. But their ammunition was exhausted, and they were beginning to feel all the horrors of famine, when a reinforcement received by the besieging army, deprived them at once of courage and of hope. A general assault took place, and the resistance of the dispirited defenders being feeble, the place was soon carried. Zombi and his followers, preferring death to captivity, threw themselves down the rocky side of the fort, and perished. Almost all the survivors were taken prisoners and sold as slaves. Such was the termination of the first black kingdom in the New World, the history of which, short as was its duration, might have taught those who affect to rank the negro with the brute creation, that he is at least not incapable of civilization. The Palmarese were probably not much behind, in any respect, the Paulists and other Brazilians; and had their success been equal to their bravery, their right to make slaves of the whites, would have been to the full as good as that which the Portuguese had to enslave them.

This event was almost immediately succeeded by a brilliant era in the history of Brazil, the discovery, in 1699, of extensive gold mines; followed, about thirty years after, by another still more unexpected, that of the diamond mines. Portugal has immensely enriched herself with the results of these golden discoveries, but it may be questioned whether Brazil has not been greatly the loser by them.

Rio de Janeiro had enjoyed a greater degree of tranquillity since its foundation, than any other settlement in Brazil, having continued to flourish during all the calamities by which the capital and Pernambuco had been visited. But, in 1710, its prosperity was interrupted by the arrival of a French squadron under M. du Clerc. This officer, whose object was plunder, landed about a

thousand marines, and attacked the city, no effort having been made to stop them on their way, by the governor, although he had at command about 12,000 troops. After a short but desperate struggle, the French, however, were overpowered by numbers, and surrendered at discretion. The victory of the Portuguese was disgraced by their barbarity. They massacred nearly all who fell into their hands. Even the surgeons sent from the French ships to attend their wounded comrades, were butchered; and Du Clerc, who was taken prisoner, was murdered in his bed. But France was able as well as willing to take vengeance, and the celebrated Admiral Duguay-Trouin was selected to inflict on the Brazilians the punishment due to their inhumanity. The next year, he entered the bay with a considerable fleet, and, with the most daring valour, leading it through all the range of batteries which defended it, carried the place by storm. After residing there for some time, to refresh his troops, he ransomed the city for 600,000 cruzados, and then returned, in triumph, to Europe. Peace was soon afterwards concluded between France and Portugal, by which Rio de Janeiro became secured from foreign invaders.

Disputes innumerable had arisen between Portugal and Spain, relative to their respective colonies on the banks of the Rio de la Plata, when, in 1750, a convention was entered into, by which their limits were agreed on. By this treaty, Portugal resigned the colony of Santo Sacramento, near the mouth of the Plata, (which had been ceded to them by the treaty of Utrecht,) in exchange for seven of the missionary settlements formed by the Jesuits on the eastern bank of the Uruguay. About 30,000 civilized Indians of the Guarany tribe, with their wives and children, inhabitants of that territory, found themselves, by this unfeeling act of reckless tyranny, compelled to emigrate from the land which they had received "from God

and their fathers," to go into other lands, chosen for them, which were unknown and unhealthy. The Jesuits had laboured more successfully among these people than among any other tribe; and numbers of the order resided among them, who appealed, but in vain, against the arbitrary arrangement which had been made by the European governments. Now, however, the Jesuits became themselves suspected by the natives, who accused them of having sold their lands to the Portuguese; their power was at an end, and they were little better than prisoners in a country where they had recently enjoyed an absolute dominion, founded on the affectionate attachment of the people. The Indians rose in all directions to oppose the mandate; but the short and useless, though vigorous resistance which they made, only left them more than ever in the power of their enemies.* Great numbers were

* "The chief of these Indians was named Sepe Tyarayu; he was a man of extraordinary courage and capacity. On one occasion, he was persuaded to enter the enemy's quarters with thirty of his men, and treat concerning a ransom. The Portuguese seized them, and then let the Guaranies know that they would exchange their prisoners for horses. To expedite the business, they sent Sepe himself, under a guard of twelve horsemen; he was on horseback also, but naked, and without arms or spurs. A river was between them and the Guaranies: Sepe desired that he might cross it to confer with his countrymen. When this was refused, he asked, how it was possible for him to settle the affair, unless he were allowed to communicate with the persons concerned? But with that cunning which is part of the savage character, he told them, as though in a sportive bravado, that if he chose, he could go to his countrymen in spite of any efforts to prevent him. They laughed, and asked in mockery how it was to be done. 'In this manner,' replied Sepe; and exciting his horse at once by the scourge and the voice, he set off at full speed. Before they thought of pursuit, it was too late; they fired and missed him; he got into the woods, dismounted, swam the river, and just at night-fall entered the Guarani camp, shivering and almost exhausted with cold. He lost his life in a subsequent engagement."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. iii. p. 466.

slaughtered, and those who refused to submit were compelled to leave the country. This war greatly strengthened the prejudice against the Jesuits,—a prejudice as unjust as the attack made on the people whom they had instructed. In the year 1761, when Carlos III. acceded to the throne of Spain, the treaty of limits was annulled; the Guaranies, who had been so wantonly and cruelly expelled, were instructed to return to their dilapidated towns and wasted country, and the Jesuits, resuming their benignant administration, exerted themselves to repair as far as possible the evils that had been done. But the part they had acted on behalf of the oppressed natives, though not the cause of the persecution under which they were destined to sink, yet, by the occassion it afforded to their enemies, was the circumstance which immediately led to their expulsion. Sebastian Joseph de Carvalho e Mello, better known by his subsequent title of Marquis de Pombal, was at this period the despotic prime-minister of Portugal, and to him the final destruction of the order must be ascribed. "The great and laudable object of his ambition," says Mr. Southey, "was to benefit his country, and restore Portugal, if not to the foreign empire which she had once possessed, at least to her former state of plenty and prosperity at home. Ignorance, superstition, and intolerance, were the main obstacles to the improvement which he designed; and whosoever attempted to remove these evils in Portugal, would be opposed by the clergy. But the original jealousy between the regular and secular clergy was still subsisting: the regulars were divided among themselves, and the only point in which all the other orders were agreed, was in envying and hating the Jesuits. Now the Jesuits were the only persons whom Carvalho feared. If they were removed, his plans would proceed without impediment; he might crush the friars, reform the respectable orders, lessen the

influence of the court of Rome, and place the religious establishment of the kingdom upon a footing not inconsistent with the progress of knowledge. Carvalho was more than fifty years of age when he entered upon his ministry. He soon acquired the favour of the sovereign by his superior talents; extraordinary and tremendous occurrences brought those talents into full action, and the ascendancy which he then obtained over the king, enabled him to carry into effect with absolute authority his schemes for the renovation of the kingdom. This was the one and worthy object upon which he was passionately bent; unhappily, he scrupled at no means by which it might be promoted; and they who maligned his motives, did not traduce his nature, when they represented him as without conscience and without humanity. Seeing the miserable state into which every thing in Portugal had sunk, he felt the necessity of great changes: his temper led him to bold and violent measures; and though it was said of him by his enemies, that he acted first, and thought afterwards, when his measures were once taken, he persevered in them inflexibly, whether they were right or wrong. He had a large portion of that national pride for which the Portuguese are remarkable, and he had also an overweening confidence in his own talents and strength of character; but his talents were very great; no man ever approached him without feeling the presence of a powerful and commanding mind. He served his king faithfully and zealously; he loved his country; and happy might it be for him if the desire of public good might be pleaded in defence of actions which are decidedly wicked and abominable. Upon that plea, however, he rested with perfect equanimity, like Sylla, but in a far different retirement, when disgrace and obloquy, and the grief of seeing his wisest plans overthrown, were added to the evils of old age, and infirmity, and pain. However much

Carvalho must have desired to lessen the power of the Jesuits, it is not probable that he had conceived even the most distant thoughts of extinguishing the order, when he began his administration. But when events arose, which seemed to render such an attempt feasible, he pursued it with characteristic and inhuman perseverance."*

His brother, Francesco Xavier de Mendonça Furtado, was appointed governor and captain-general of Maranham and Para. He hated the Jesuits; and, in depriving them of that authority which they had so beneficently exercised, he added insult to injury, sneeringly telling them, that they might henceforth serve God with less trial of their patience. Men were not wanting to stand forward in their support, and to rebut the gross and scandalous calumnies invented to hasten their downfal; but the influence of Pombal was too great to be borne up against, and their day of power was past. In 1760, they were ignominiously expelled from Brazil.† Those of the Spanish colonies,

* Southey's Hist. of Brazil, vol. iii. p. 505.

† "The colleges, churches, and habitations of the Jesuits had been taken possession of for the crown, and the property therein taken for confiscation. Their books and papers had been seized; their very hospitals had not been spared; the patients had been compelled to leave their beds, some of them in such a condition that they died while they were being removed to another place of shelter. At St. Paul's, notwithstanding the old enmity with which they had been regarded, they were treated with humanity and respect in their disgrace; and the bishop, Fr. Antonio da Madre de Deos, said publicly, that the expulsion of the Jesuits would draw after it the ruin of religion first, and the overthrow of the government afterwards. The Rio was the place of embarkation for all the members from the south. One hundred and forty-five were stowed in one ship below decks, like negroes upon the middle passage; till the surgeon obtained some alleviation of their durance, by assuring the captain, that if he persisted in confining them so closely, not one of them would reach Lisbon alive, and that the disease which would certainly be generated among them, would as certainly be communicated to the ship's company.

"Those Jesuits who had previously been sent to Lisbon as prisoners,

eight years afterwards, shared the same fate; and the conduct of the Spanish government towards the men to whom they were so deeply indebted, was worse, if possible, than that of the Portuguese.

This was not the only injury which Brazil sustained at the hands of this minister. Hitherto, the Portuguese colonies had been, in a great measure, exempted from that complicated system of restriction and monopoly under which the Spanish settlements groaned. But, under the administration of the Marquis de Pombal, Portugal exhibited the singular spectacle of a nation beginning to adopt an exploded system, at the very time when every other people was abandoning it, and studying to remedy the evils which it had occasioned. This system was that of exclusive companies, which Pombal carried to such an extent as to subject to them even port-wine, the staple commodity of the kingdom. Extending it to Brazil, he subjected to an exclusive company the trade of the northern provinces of Maranham, Para, and Pernambuco. The

were cast into prison, and never heard of more, till the king's death and the disgrace of Pombal; when, after a confinement of eighteen years, they were set at liberty. The others, as they arrived in the Tagus, were transferred to other ships, not being permitted to set foot on shore, nor to communicate with friend or kinsman; they were then sent to the Mediterranean, landed upon the Papal states, and there turned adrift."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. iii. p. 546.

"Fifty-three of them were embarked from Pernambuco in a ship which had belonged to the Company, being for the use of the provincial to cross the Atlantic, and go from port to port in the performance of his visitation. It had been seized for the crown, with the rest of their property; and was now, for the apparent purpose of adding to their humiliation, employed as a transport, in which they were to be conveyed as convicts. They were treated with extreme cruelty upon the voyage: when they were suffering the most painful thirst, the captain would not allow, even to the dying, an additional drop of water to moisten their lips; nor would he permit them the consolation of receiving the last sacrament in death. Five of them died under this inhuman usage."—*Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 542.

regulations of this company were, in some respects, of a nature peculiarly preposterous. Ignorant of the limits which bound the authority of sovereigns in commercial affairs, the court of Lisbon ordained that the shares in this company's stock should bear a certain price, and, in order to enforce this regulation, that they should be a legal tender of payment. The consequence was, that both the credit and the commerce of the company declined; the number of vessels employed in the trade sank from thirteen or fourteen to four or five; and the ministry who succeeded Pombal, repealing his obnoxious measures, restored things to their former footing.

In 1762, a war broke out between England and France and Spain, in which Portugal sided with this country. The first act of hostility in the western hemisphere, was the seizure of the Portuguese settlement of Colonia, in the Plata, by Zeballos, the Spanish governor of Buenos Ayres. Gomez Freyre, the governor of Rio de Janeiro, had despatched to its assistance a squadron consisting chiefly of English privateers, commanded by Captain Macnamara, an Irishman.* It arrived too late to prevent the capture; but Macnamara had nearly succeeded in silencing the batteries, when his ship took fire, and himself and three-fourths of his crew were drowned.† The other ships were enabled, by the negligence of the Spaniards, to refit and return to Rio. This was the most remarkable action of the war beyond the Atlantic, and the first in which the English distinguished themselves in the defence of Brazil. The following year peace was concluded, and Colonia reverted to the Portuguese. In the same year, the Conde da

* Penrose the poet served as lieutenant in one of the privateers.

† "A good swimmer took Macnamara on his back, and made for shore: his strength began to fail; and it is said that the captain, when he perceived this, gave him his sword, bade him look to his own preservation, then let go his hold and sunk."—*Southey's Hist. of Brazil*, vol. iii. p. 562.

Cunha, on being appointed to the viceroyalty of Brazil, was instructed to fix his residence at Rio de Janeiro, which, being nearer to the mines and to the settlements on the Plata, had become of greater importance than Bahia, and presented a more secure and better defended port. It has ever since been the seat of government.

From this period down to the emigration of the royal family of Portugal to Brazil, the history of that country is composed chiefly of some attempts of the Spaniards to extend their boundaries on the Plata; the mismanagement and decay of the Jesuit establishments; the enlargement of the mining districts, particularly in the province of Matto Grosso; the endeavours to conciliate or reduce the natives; some disputes with the French on the frontier of Cayenne; and the more peaceful occupations of opening new roads, and extending or improving the different branches of commerce. The tranquillity of the country was for a short period interrupted, in 1789, by a conspiracy in the captaincy of Minas Geraes, headed by a cavalry officer named Joaquim Jose da Silva Xavier, but more commonly called *O Tiradentes*, the Tooth-drawer. The chief cause of discontent was an order of the government, exacting too large a proportion of the produce of the mines; and the object of the insurgents was to form an independent republic in Minas Geraes, and to induce Rio de Janeiro to unite with it. But the conspirators were all seized before they had matured their plans of resistance: Tiradentes was hanged, and the rest banished.

During the first years of the revolutionary war, while all Europe was in arms, Brazil remained undisturbed, and in a state of rapidly increasing prosperity. Some symptoms of improvement also manifested themselves in the spirit of the government, by a certain degree of liberty which was now allowed to the press. In 1801, the Portuguese attacked the Spaniards in the reductions which

had been the scene of the war against the Guaranies.* The inveterate enmity of these tribes towards the Brazilians, had, it seems, been effaced by more recent and less pardonable injuries received from the Spaniards, and the Portuguese were now welcomed as liberators. After a short struggle, they possessed themselves of the reductions, which, notwithstanding the endeavours of the Spanish by force or by treaty to regain them, have ever since been annexed to Brazil.

In 1807, the French army under Marshal Junot invaded Portugal, with the design of seizing the royal family of Portugal. The Prince Regent had tried every means, and had submitted to the most humiliating concessions, to avert the impending storm. But Napoleon had resolved on adding the Peninsula to his empire. Sir Sidney Smith at that time commanded an English squadron at the mouth of the Tagus; and when, on the 29th of November, the vanguard of the French army appeared on the heights above Lisbon, then, and not till then, the prince determined upon emigration to Brazil. Every thing of value which could be transported, was hastily put on board the fleet; and the French troops arrived only in time to witness its departure. They entered Lisbon on the following day. The prince, after a prosperous voyage, arrived at Bahia on the 25th of January, 1808, where he was received with the most enthusiastic expressions of joy. Some of his advisers wished him to stop here; but, with a praiseworthy firmness, he adhered to the resolution he had taken, and after spending a month in that city, sailed to Rio Janeiro, where he arrived on the 7th of March. Thus was

* Though Portugal obtained possession of these settlements at the time of the expulsion of the Guaranies in 1753, it afterwards ceded the territory to the Spaniards in 1777, in exchange for the province of S. Pedro, which had been wrested from them.

realized, under the impulsion of necessity arising from circumstances which it was impossible to foresee, the bold measure first conceived by Pombal, of transferring the seat of the monarchy from Europe to Brazil. From this moment may be dated the virtual independence of the western empire. "The removal of the court demonstrated," M. Beauchamp remarks, "that Portugal stood in need of Brazil, but that Brazil had no longer need of Portugal; and it became henceforth impossible that the union of the two countries should continue to subsist on the same conditions as before." *

The first beneficial consequence of the arrival of the royal family, was the opening of its ports. In the very year of the removal (1808), no fewer than ninety foreign ships entered the harbour of Rio de Janeiro alone, and a proportionate number visited those of Maranham, Pernambuco, and Bahia. In 1810, a treaty of commerce was concluded with England, which contained many important provisions. British commodities were subjected to a duty only of 15 per cent, while those of other nations paid 24 per cent. Gold and silver alone, according to the old commercial prejudices, were excepted from the provisions of the treaty, and continued still to be prohibited. The island of St. Catherine's was declared a free port. Unlimited permission was at the same time granted to build ships for the British navy, and to employ the noble forests of South America in their construction. In consequence of these arrangements, Brazil has become extremely interesting to this country in a naval and commercial point of view.

The abrogation of the colonial laws, which took place soon after the arrival of the regent, the introduction of the

* L'Indépendance de l'Empire du Brésil. Par M. A. de Beauchamp. Paris, Juin, 1824.

vine, and the encouragement given to improvements in horticulture, the adoption of vaccination, the better regulation of places of public interment, and some slight melioration of the courts of judicature, may be enumerated among the other important benefits for which the Brazilians are indebted to the residence of the court. If to this are added, the stimulus given to the progress of internal improvement, the immense accession of population, and the positive advantages accruing from the new organization of this part of the Portuguese empire,—we shall be able to form some just idea of the immense importance to Brazil, of what was regarded as only a temporary transfer of the seat of government to that country. Who could have foreseen that the invasion of Portugal would have given birth to a new empire in another hemisphere?

"But the stimulus most prompt and efficacious," says Mr. Luccock, (who visited Rio both in 1808 and again in 1813,) "in promoting internal improvement, and particularly in forming a national character and feeling, of which Brazil was almost destitute, and for want of which the country had nearly fallen, like the colonies of Spain, into a number of disjointed states,—arose out of the measure which gave to this important part of the Portuguese dominions, privileges and honours similar to those enjoyed by the mother country. The period for assuming this new distinction under the title of the united kingdom of Portugal, Brazil, and Algarva, was judiciously fixed for the anniversary of the queen's birthday, in December, 1815. In order fully to understand the extent and importance of this change, it will be necessary to recollect, that, in old times, the provinces were almost wholly unconnected with each other;—that they had scarcely any stronger common bond than the similarity of language, the circumstance of receiving their respective triennial go-

vernors from the same court, and the commercial one, which led their views and interests to the same European city;—that, between some of those provinces, there existed an opposition of interests, and between others, open and avowed jealousies. Hence it was, that, when the court arrived in Rio, the colonies were found to consist of portions so disjointed as to be ready, on the slightest agitation, to fall in pieces, and render the situation of the royal emigrants very precarious.* There were required all the address of government, and all the powerful support which it received from Britain, to preserve the administration from positive disrespect,—to keep the whole of Brazil within one common bond,—to turn the people's attention from Lisbon to Rio,—to make them feel that the latter city had become the centre of their union, the capital of their widely diffused people, the source of their security, the focus and fountain of their wealth and their honour. The first effort towards accomplishing this important work was made when the ports of Brazil were opened to foreign commerce; and a wonderful alteration it produced in the people's views and modes of thinking. Yet, it left them without any strong bias to one particular country, and served rather to incline each province, without regard to the general interest, to the side where its commercial advantage was most considerable. But no sooner was the country declared a kingdom, than it displayed an individuality of sentiment, and joined in one common act of homage to the throne. Addresses of exultation and gratitude to the sovereign, poured in, by

* When Mr. Southey says (History of Brazil, vol. iii. p. 696), that, on the removal of the court of Lisbon to Rio, the people of Brazil "were everywhere Portuguese in language and feeling," and that "there existed no provincial animosities,"—he probably means the latter assertion to be qualified by the former; there no longer existed a Dutch or a Spanish interest; and the country enjoyed internal tranquillity.

one simultaneous movement, from every part of the country; and the most remote and obscure township felt proud of the privilege which admitted it to address its own sovereign under a Brazilian title, on Brazilian ground: it perceived itself to be, however humble, an integral part of the extended whole. All the blessings of a revolution, which the people had formerly wished for, had fallen upon their country, almost without their being sensible of the change." *

The erection of Brazil into a kingdom was attended with another beneficial circumstance. When the merchants of Rio met to congratulate their sovereign, they subscribed a considerable sum of money to form a fund for the purposes of general education; and a decree was passed to render it secure and effective. Schools for all classes became in consequence multiplied;† and the Lancastrian or British system is now extensively adopted. Schools for the teaching of the first rudiments are to be found in all the towns, while, in all the larger ones, Greek and Latin masters, and professors of rhetoric, natural philosophy, chemistry, and mathematics, are established. There are public libraries at Rio Janeiro and Bahia, and printing offices throughout Brazil. Rio Janeiro has a handsome museum, a school for engineers, and a naval college; Bahia, a school for medicine and surgery; and Pernambuco, a botanical garden.‡ These are hopeful symptoms, although it must not be concealed, that hitherto little progress has been made in dispelling the gross ignorance which reigns throughout the country.

* Notes on Rio Janeiro, &c. 4to. London, 1820. pp. 568, 569.

† Mr. Luccock noticed, in the Gazette of Rio of July 9, 1814, a long advertisement to this effect: "Whoever may wish to send their daughters, female servants, and *slaves*, to read, write, and account, &c. may speak with a person resident in the Rua do Lavradia."—*Notes*, p. 567.

‡ L'Indépendance du Brésil. Par M. de Beauchamp. P. 132.

In 1819, an event of some importance occurred. By the treaty of Amiens in 1802, Portuguese Guiana had been given up to France. The court of Rio now resolved on recovering it, and a body of troops was despatched under the command of Colonel Manoel Marquez, supported by the English man of war Confiance, Capt. Yeo. Their combined attack forced the enemy to surrender on the 12th of January.

In 1821, the state of affairs in the mother country compelled the late regent, now King John VI., to return to Europe, as the only chance of preserving the integrity of the monarchy. The cortes of Lisbon, convoked under democratical influence, invited their sovereign to revisit his ancient capital, and deputies from Brazil were summoned to attend the sittings of the national assembly. The constitutionalists, and indeed, the Portuguese generally, had become impatient of a state of things which seemed to reduce them, as a nation, to a mere colony of Brazil, and they resolved on recovering the pre-eminence. But this was not all. Before the colonial deputies could arrive, the cortes began to betray their designs on Brazil, which had for their object, nothing short of its being thrown back into a state of absolute dependence on the mother country. They even wished to revive all the impolitic restrictions and monopolies of the exploded colonial system; and England, the deliverer of Portugal, was to be deprived of her only recompense in a free trade to Brazil.*

* The following declaration is extracted from a manifesto of the Portuguese nation at this period: "Commerce and industry, which can never prosper but under the benignant shadow of peace, had not only been despised and relinquished, *but seemed even entirely destroyed, by the unlimited license granted to foreign vessels in all the ports of Brazil; by the fatal treaty of commerce with England in* 1810; by the consequent decay of trade and national manufactures," &c. &c. See De l'Empire du Brésil, considéré sous ses Rapports Politiques et Commerciaux. Par M. Angliviel la Beaumelle. Paris, 1823. P. 185.

In the mean while, the ferment which had spread over other quarters of South America, was not excluded from Brazil. In 1817, a republican insurrection had broken out in Pernambuco, which threatened at first to spread over the whole country; but the port being blockaded, and the troops concentrated from the other provinces, the insurgents were overpowered, and the ringleaders were hanged.* The spirit of disaffection was not, however, extinguished, and the whole country seemed on the point of a revolution, when, on the 18th of February, 1821, the king consented to nominate certain persons, at the head of whom was the Marquis de Alegrete, to take into consideration such parts of the constitution, the bases of which had been promulgated in the mother country, as might be applicable to Brazil. Shortly afterwards, the prince, Don Pedro, read to the people of Rio a royal proclamation, securing to them the constitution such as it should be framed by the cortes at Lisbon; and he ended by taking the oath to observe the future constitution. His example was followed by the governors of Pernambuco, Bahia, and the other captaincies; and the king confirmed all that had taken place.† Having formed his resolution to re-

* On receiving tidings at Rio of this insurrection, the king is stated to have exclaimed: "How is it that my subjects revolt? I have always tried to do them good; I do not know that I have injured any one. What do they wish for?"—*Luccock's Notes*, p. 557.

† "The situation of the king," says M. la Beaumelle, "was critical. He was surrounded with numbers of Portuguese troops who were devoted to the system adopted by their comrades. The recent insurrection of Pernambuco shewed that there was a republican leaven in the country. He consulted his love for his people; and on the 26th Feb., before news could arrive of the installation of the cortes, he swore, at all hazards, to observe the constitution they should form, if one should be formed. The same oath was taken by his court, and, probably with less good faith, by the royal family. It would have cost little sacrifice to Don John VI. to become a constitutional monarch: he had never loved or exercised despotism. If he had now and then employed his absolute authority, it was only to do good."—P. 68.

cross the Atlantic, on the 22d of April, his majesty nominated his eldest son, Don Pedro, regent of the new kingdom, with full powers to make peace or war, and to exercise all the other functions of royalty; an act which involved, by implication, a recognition of the substantial independence of Brazil. Two days after, the royal family embarked, attended by many of the emigrant nobles, and bade adieu to the country which, in the midst of the political commotions that were shaking and desolating Europe, had afforded a safe haven to its sovereign, while many of his brother monarchs perished in the storm.

Never did a ruler assume the reins of government under more difficult and trying circumstances than did Don Pedro,—with a dilapidated treasury, an enormous public debt, and the provinces in insubordination. Bahia openly disputed the authority of the prince, and was supported by the cortes. The regent made every possible personal sacrifice to meet the exigencies of his situation. He reduced his expenditure to the monthly sum allowed his princess for pin-money; he retired to his country-house, observing there the most rigid economy; and of 1200 horses which composed his stud, (a moderate one for a Brazilian prince,) he retained only about a hundred and fifty. * By dint of exertions and sacrifices, he reduced the public budget from fifty millions of francs to fifteen millions, and he was bent on accomplishing a still further reduction. But all was of no avail: the provinces held back the revenue, and the prince found himself reduced to the situation of governor of Rio Janeiro only, while the financial embarrassments increased every day. The ministers which the king his father had left behind, were obnoxious to one party as being Portuguese, to others, as

* So says M. la Beaumelle. M. de Beauchamp says—"réformant les 600 chevaux de son écurie, n'en gardant pas même cinquante." But he does not reckon mules, which the former seems to include.

supposed to be attached to the old order of things; and the regent shared in their unpopularity. Disgusted more and more with this unhappy posture of affairs, with the insubordination of the army, and the intrigues of the junta imposed upon him by the cortes, the prince solicited his recal to Europe: he was detained in Brazil only by the engagement he had contracted with the king, to remain there for the sake of preserving it, in case of a separation from the mother country, to the Braganza dynasty. "At length," says M. de Beauchamp, "the Brazilians were disarmed by this noble conduct: they recognised his activity, his beneficence, his assiduity in the affairs of government; and the habitual feelings of affection and respect for the house of Braganza, which had been for a moment laid asleep by distrust, were rewakened with increased strength. To these was joined an almost idolatrous sentiment of attachment for the virtues and splendid as well as amiable qualities of the young Archduchess Leopoldina, the daughter of the Emperor of Austria, and the beloved wife of the regent."

From the hour of his arrival in Europe, the king had only been the too docile instrument of the cortes; and he found himself under the necessity of lending his authority to a constitution which affected to treat his Brazilian subjects as mere colonists. By this step he took part with Portugal against Brazil, and a rupture between the two countries became every day more inevitable. On the 4th of October, 1821, a premature attempt was made at Rio, to proclaim the regent emperor; but it was suppressed, and was followed by no other immediate result than the temporary arrest of some subordinate agents. The provinces were not ripe for so hazardous a movement; and possibly, the object of those who originated it, was merely to ascertain their disposition. However this might be, the mere imperfect demonstration gave confidence and in-

creased influence to the regent, who now felt that, in case of a rupture, his only way was to put himself at the head of the Brazilian party, since, by joining the Portuguese interest, he would not merely precipitate the definitive separation of the colony from the mother country, but would render inevitable the adoption of a republican form of government.

Almost at the very moment that the prince was refusing the imperial crown, the cortes of Lisbon, blinded by a selfish policy, or hurried on by passion, were passing their decrees of the 29th of September; by one of which (No. 124), Brazil was distributed into provincial governments, communicating with the minister at Lisbon, and the superior tribunals were suppressed: by the other (No. 125), the prince regent was recalled to Portugal, and on his return, was to be sent on his trav ls, incognito, through Spain, France, and England, accompanied with a retinue nominated by the cortes. Such was the sagacious plan of the constitution-makers of the Peninsula; and it is impossible, remarks M. la Beaumelle, to conceive of any legislative enactments more exquisitely adapted to defeat the intentions of their framers. "At the same time that they deeply irritated the natives by the parcelling out of the kingdom, they gave umbrage to all persons in office, a great proportion of whom were Europeans, by the suppression of the court and the tribunals; and what was still more offensive, they treated with gross disrespect the heir to the throne, in imposing upon him as a duty, a tour, which, if advisable, ought to have been voluntary, and in assigning him an escort whom he could look upon only as so many spies. A centre was given to the emancipation, by the offer thus made to a prince of high spirit and resolution, of a country entirely ready to defend him."

These decrees reached Rio Janeiro on the 10th of Dec. Orders were issued for the election of the junta, who were

to be installed two months after (the 10th of Feb.), and to whom the prince was to consign the government. He himself made preparations for his departure; but the public sentiment opposed his determination. No sooner were the decrees of the cortes made known, than the greatest fermentation was excited in the capital. The cortes had reckoned upon the Portuguese regiment stationed there, to give effect to their orders, but the Brazilians were not to be so easily intimidated. The three provinces of Saint Paul, Rio Janeiro, and Minas Geraes, who were afterwards joined by that of Rio Grande do Sul, presented to the prince the most spirited addresses. The president of the municipal deputation of Rio Janeiro expressed himself in these bold and almost menacing terms: "The departure of your royal highness from the states of Brazil, will be the decree that will seal for ever the independence of this kingdom." That independence would in that case have involved nothing short of its distribution into federal republics, for its recolonization had become impossible. There remained but one single tie between the two countries, and that would have been dissolved by the departure of the regent. Aware of this, Don Pedro resolved to disobey the sinister mandate of the cortes, and he signified his resolution to remain, to the municipal senate of Rio Janeiro, in these words: "Since it is for the good of all, and for the general happiness of the nation, I have decided—tell the people that I remain." This notification, which was made public on the 9th of Jan. 1822, was received with unanimous acclamations, and produced the greatest enthusiasm. The Portuguese troops alone observed a sullen silence, and a report was spread, that they were about to put the decree of the cortes in execution by open force, and carry off the prince. This report increased the popular commotion. At the moment when the agitation was at its height, the Portuguese general,

Avilez, threw up the command of the regiment, and demanded to be allowed to return to Europe. This step was suspected to be only a feint, or a pretence for declining the further orders of the regent. On the night after the 11th instant, the troops took up arms, either to choose a new commander, or to detain their old one. On learning this, the Brazilians immediately followed their example. In a few hours, the camp of Saint Anne was covered with native troops and a multitude of armed inhabitants. Both sides had provided themselves with artillery, and they seemed on the point of an engagement. But the sight of an entire population under arms, cooled the courage of the European troops: they offered terms, which was admitting themselves to be conquered; and, on capitulating, were sent to Praja Grande, on the other side of the bay, where preparations were made for their embarkation. There, however, recovering from the first emotion which had led them to give up the field without striking a blow, they assumed afresh a menacing attitude, declaring, that they would remain at Praja Grande till the arrival of an expedition that was expected from Portugal. There was no time to lose: the state of things was most critical. The prince fitted out some armed vessels, summoned reinforcements from Saint Paul and Minas Geraes, and blockaded the little European army * at once by sea and by land. Putting himself on board the commander's vessel, he seized the match of a gun directed against the Portuguese forces, and exclaimed, as he shewed himself to the general, "This gun is mine, and you will take notice of the first shot, for it will be of my firing." These words from the prince produced such an impression on the troops, that, in the course of the 12th and 13th, they quietly embarked and set sail. Hardly were they out of sight, when signal was made of the arrival of another European fleet,

* About 1800 men.

conveying fresh troops. This armament consisted of several men of war, among others, the John the Sixth, on board of which was the commander Maximilian, with orders to bring Don Pedro to Lisbon. His instructions were to place himself, on his arrival at Rio, under the orders of the prince. "The only order I have to give you," said the prince, "is to go back;"—and the troops were not suffered to land. The whole of the expedition, with the exception of a frigate which the prince detained, set sail in consequence for Europe.* The inhabitants of Pernambuco had already, before they knew of what had transpired in the capital, expelled all the Portuguese troops from that province.

In transmitting an account of these important events to the king his father, Don Pedro represented that it was the wish of the provinces to preserve in Brazil a centre of government, but subject, both as to legislation and the general administration, to the king and the cortes. The latter, alarmed by the tidings of these proceedings, seemed at length to perceive the risk they had run of losing Brazil altogether, and they began to retrace their steps. Eight days only before the receipt of the prince's despatches, they had suppressed the last central establishment which remained beyond the seas—the Marine Academy of Rio Janeiro. On the 6th of March, they came to a resolution, that further discussion respecting the constitution, so far as regarded Brazil, should be suspended till the deputies from that country had been heard. Four days after, it was determined that the Academy should remain at Rio Janeiro. Then a report was made by a commission, which amounted to a humble apology: it proposed to suspend the departure of the prince and the establishment of the junta, and to supersede the disorganising of the central governments till they should be replaced. Brazil was to

* On his return to Lisbon, the commander was brought to trial for having followed his instructions too literally, and was immediately degraded.

be offered, at the same time, one, or even two delegations of the executive power,—which had been but a little before positively refused, on the ground that the executive power was incommunicable, and incapable of being delegated. These insidious proposals were meant as a lure: the division of Brazil into two parts, would have been equivalent to its submission to the cortes, for it would have deprived the country of the power of any effectual resistance. But, while they were deliberating on the banks of the Tagus, they were acting in Brazil. Minas Geraes and the captaincy of Espiritu Santo adhered openly to the Brazilian system, and Pernambuco had already committed itself too far to leave any doubt of its concurrence. The movement was universal: all the southern provinces, the population of which forms the majority of that of the whole nation, already styled themselves, in their reports, the Allied Provinces. It only remained for the prince to put himself at the head of this confederacy. Perceiving that the time was now come to give his operations the sanction of a sort of Brazilian representation, yet, not being able, consistently with the system of union he had resolved to preserve, to invest this body with legislative authority, he gave orders that every province should choose one or more attorneys-general, who should collectively form a council of state, of which he was to be president. Such a council ought to have been regarded by the cortes as the pledge and guarantee of the union of the two kingdoms; but they did not see it in this light. After a lengthened discussion, it was decided, that there should be appointed for Brazil as many governors as the provinces should wish for. The Brazilian deputies, who had defended point by point the interests of their country, when the majority had passed this resolution in opposition to their remonstrances, unanimously refused to subscribe to the constitution, and quitted Lisbon; "thus," remarks M. la Beaumelle, "breaking in the hands of the rulers of Portugal, the fetters they had forged for

Brazil." The province of Bahia sent in an energetic appeal, and declared in favour of the Brazilian government. This document was made the subject of much miserable quibbling, the legality of the signatures being questioned, and the assembly passed to the order of the day. The next day, all the inhabitants of Bahia resident at Lisbon, sent in their adherence to the wishes of their countrymen.

In the mean time, the people of Rio Janeiro had, on the 13th of May, proclaimed the prince perpetual protector of Brazil, the title to be hereditary. He had accepted it; it was one that served to recal that which the heroic Fernandez Vieira had assumed, when he recovered Brazil from the Dutch. At first, the Brazilians had confined their demands to an equality of co-operation in the legislative power of the cortes, a local delegation of the executive power, central magistracies, and a free trade. But now, they asked for a separate legislature; wishing only for an alliance between the two nations under the protection and direction of the monarch, the sole bond of union between them. The cortes had sunk into utter discredit: all parties, widely as they differed on other points, were unanimous in their opposition to a re-union with Portugal. It is generally the case, that the intestine divisions of a country are laid asleep by a foreign dispute. Already, before the provincial delegates could be assembled, who were to form the council of state, the local authorities had demanded a constituent and legislative assembly; and the council of state itself, at its first sitting, declared its own incompetency, and called for the same convocation. The prince acceded to this by his decree of the 3d of June, deeming it indispensable to strengthen the Brazilian union by an elective assembly.* This was the more necessary, as

* The word *assembly* was adopted from the French, to avoid using the word *cortes*, which had become odious to the Brazilians.

Brazil was on the point of being no longer represented in the national congress. The deputies to the cortes had been instructed to stipulate, 1. That Brazil should have a national representation for herself; 2. That the country should always be governed by the next heir to the crown, being of age, when the king should be in Europe; and 3. That the seat of government should be alternately in each of the two kingdoms. These demands were peremptorily rejected in the sitting of the 6th of July, and a new order was passed for the return of the prince to Portugal. The Abbé de Medrons is reported to have said on this occasion, that if the Brazilians were no longer willing to be brothers, they should be slaves; and he offered his services as chaplain to the army that should be sent to subdue them. But all these measures, marked as they were by haughtiness, and breathing menaces on the part of the weaker party, served only to decide and hasten energetic measures of resistance on the part of the stronger one. Mutual recriminations ensued; and the cortes, aping the Roman senate which sold the field in which Hannibal was encamped, disposed of Brazil as if that kingdom had still been in their hands. On the 19th of September, it was resolved at Lisbon, that the convocation of the Brazilian assembly was null and void; that the government of Rio Janeiro was illegal; that the powers of the prince should cease from that time; that he should be bound to return to Europe within four months, on pain of forfeiting his hereditary rights; and lastly, that the ministry, and all commanders, naval and military, should be responsible for their obedience to the intrusive government.

What was the result? A year had not elapsed from the date of this imprudent and impotent edict, when the assembly of Brazil was installed, the government of the prince regent had been changed into the imperial government

his ministers were executing his orders, and every commander had submitted to his authority; while, at Lisbon, those who had passed these iniquitous decrees against him, had been unable either to maintain their power, or to secure themselves an asylum in the land which they had governed.

Up to the passing of this last decree, the Brazilians had not seriously thought of effecting a separation, how desirable soever it might have appeared to many persons. But now, all the provinces became united in a wish for independence: Bahia even united with the rest; and Monte Video, which had hitherto been considered as an independent state, solicited a re-union with Brazil. A few days after, a squadron sent from Portugal with all the disposable troops which the government had the means of transporting across the seas, arrived at Bahia, and took possession of the city; but General Madeira, the commander, was unable to extend his conquest beyond the walls: the whole province and even the islands in the bay remained loyal to the union. It was the same with the provinces of Para and Maranham, beyond the walls of their capitals. At length, the two countries were fairly placed, by the infatuation of the cortes, in a state of open war. In the last moments of their political existence, affecting to carry things with a higher hand than ever, they shortened the term allowed the prince regent for his return, threatening him with exclusion from the throne of Portugal in case of disobedience; prohibited the exportation to Brazil of all arms and ammunition, subjecting all foreign vessels that should be taken with such stores on board to confiscation; and put in blockade (upon paper only, however) its twelve thousand leagues of coast. Besides the Portuguese troops at Bahia, who were blockaded by the militia of that and the neighbouring provinces, there was at Monte Video a Portuguese

garrison, who, having been formed into a deliberative body, with an elective council, were waiting only for the orders of the cortes to give up the town, which had cost so long a contest, not to the regent of Brazil, but either to the Spaniards or to the government of Buenos Ayres. Still, the Brazilians had hitherto recognised the authority of the king: it was the legislative decrees of the cortes only that they had resisted, denying the competency of their authority; and the king was represented as the prisoner of a faction. Similar language was used in the cortes with regard to the prince, for whom the highest respect was professed; but he too was considered as held in captivity by a knot of courtiers. Now, however, that the disputes between the two kingdoms had come to an open rupture, and it was necessary to repel force by force, it became impossible that the two crowns should remain even nominally on the same head.

In a manifesto dated August 1, 1822, which was a spirited appeal to the people of Brazil, the prince regent charges the cortes of Lisbon with having destroyed all the established forms, and changed all the institutions of the monarchy; after which, it is added, "Portugal cannot compel us to follow her in this system of shame and degradation, without violating the very principles on which she founds her own revolution and her right of changing her political institutions,—without destroying the bases on which are built her new rights, the inalienable rights of the people.*" The southern provinces of Brazil are com-

* This interesting state-paper commences with the following paragraph: "Brazilians, the time for deceiving mankind is past. The governments which would found their power on the pretended ignorance of the people, or on old errors and obsolete abuses, will see the colossus of their greatness fall from the fragile basis on which it was once erected. It has been owing to their not recognising this truth, that the Cortes of Lisbon have compelled the southern provinces of Brazil to shake off their yoke. It is be-

plimented with having withstood alike the republican desires and dispositions which had manifested themselves in some quarters, and the seductive examples of some neighbouring nations. "It is they who have preserved the monarchy in the great American continent, and maintained inviolate the acknowledged rights of the august house of Braganza."

In a manifesto* addressed to foreign nations, dated the 6th of August, containing a formal declaration of the independence of Brazil, the prince regent, after entering into a lengthened detail of the tyrannical measures of the cortes, adverts to the supposed durance and bondage in which his august father was held by the dominant faction, styling him a state-prisoner and a captive, and solemnly protests that he still looks forward to the re-union of all the parts of the monarchy under one sole sovereign; with which reserve he swears to defend the legitimate rights and the future constitution of Brazil. There is no room to suspect the sincerity of these professions on the part of the prince himself, with whatsoever reserve they might be put forth at this time by his advisers.

It was three months after the date of these manifestoes, that the municipal senate of Rio Janeiro, at an extraordinary sitting, held September 7, came to the resolution of sending a circular address to all the other municipal senates of Brazil, in which the urgent necessity was insisted upon

cause I have respected it, that I now see all Brazil united round me, asking for the defence of their rights, and the maintenance of their liberty and independence. Under these circumstances, *I owe it to you to speak the truth.* Hear me."

* In this manifesto it is distinctly stated, that Portugal had offered to cede to France a part of the province of Para, on condition that that power should furnish troops and transports for the reduction of Brazil; and that proposals had been made to England, with the same views, to give perpetuity to the commercial treaty of 1810, and even to extend it by additional advantages.

of investing his royal highness the prince regent and perpetual protector of Brazil, as soon as possible, with the effective exercise of all the attributes of the executive, which, under a free government, ought to belong to the constitutional king;—a necessity rising out of the situation of the country relative to internal as well as to foreign enemies, who were making war upon the territory of Brazil. Soon after this circular had been privately issued, and favourable answers had been received from the provinces of Minas and Saint Paul, and the captaincy of Espiritu Santo, fresh despatches from Lisbon arrived, containing the official confirmation of the reports which had agitated the country, relative to the order for recalling the prince, and the expedition with which the cortes threatened to chastise the rebels of Brazil. This intelligence produced such a burst of public feeling in Rio, that, according to the official statement put forth by the senate, the prince would have been at once proclaimed constitutional emperor of Brazil by the people, had not the senate taken the precaution to calm the public impatience by its edict of the 21st of September, in which it was announced, that the proclamation should be made with due solemnity on the 12th of the ensuing month. On that day, accordingly, it took place in the provinces of Rio Janeiro, Minas, Saint Paul, and Espiritu Santo: at Villa Rica and Queluz it was made on the 30th of September. On the first of December, the coronation of the new emperor of Brazil was solemnized, when his majesty, Pedro I., took the oath to defend with his sword the country, the people, and the constitution, *if* it should be worthy of Brazil and of its sovereign. On assuming the imperial style, Don Pedro, however, neither demanded nor obtained the least augmentation either of his revenue or of his powers; and in his speech at the opening of the constituent assembly on the 3d of May, 1823, he professes, that the title con-

ferred on him on the 13th of May preceding, of perpetual protector of Brazil, was still more flattering to his heart than that of emperor.

The first act of the imperial government was to summon a constituent and legislative assembly, which was to meet on the 26th of February, at Rio; but the opening of the chambers was subsequently postponed by the emperor till the 3d of May, the anniversary of the discovery of Brazil by the navigator Cabral. The act of adjournment, together with the order for the suppression of all secret societies, issued soon after the accession of D. Pedro, gave some dissatisfaction to the democratical party, who discovered their jealousy of the emperor in the first sittings of the assembly, by raising a clamour against the form of the oath of allegiance, by which obedience was professed to the will of the emperor. At Rio, however, the popularity of the court continued to increase; and such was the ardour of the loyalty, or the public spirit of the citizens, that they spontaneously voted the annual sum of 400,000 francs for the augmentation of the Brazilian navy. In the mean time, Bahia, the second city in the empire, was surrounded and closely pressed by 20,000 Brazilian troops, chiefly volunteers, under the command of Colonel Jose Joaquim da Silva Lima. Towards the end of June, a council of war was held, in which it was determined by the officers of the Portuguese army, to abandon the city, and make their escape, if possible, by sea. Measures were accordingly taken for its evacuation with the utmost haste; the gold and silver of the churches were carried off, as well as the public chest, and, in a word, Bahia was pillaged. The troops having embarked, the squadron prepared to set sail on the night of the 2d of July, together with all the other vessels in the harbour, which were laden with troops and passengers. The latter, fearing rough treatment from the Brazilians, reckoned upon re-

pairing to different parts of Europe and Spanish America. The bar of Bahia was blockaded by the squadron of Rio Janeiro, consisting of sixty sail, under the command of Lord Cochrane, who had hoisted his flag on board the Don Pedro. The enemy's fleet consisted of eighty sail, including twenty men of war. The Portuguese general Madeira was on board the Don Joam VI., together with all the plunder of Bahia. Taking advantage of a favourable wind and the extreme width of the road, the fugitives contrived to escape the Brazilian fleet; but Lord Cochrane no sooner learned that they had slipped out, than he set sail in pursuit, overtook part of the armament between Bahia and Pernambuco, and succeeded in capturing several vessels belonging to the convoy. He continued the pursuit for three days. General Silva da Lima entered the city on the same day, the 2d of July, and the imperial government was peaceably established there without any bloodshed or opposition. Para and St. Louis in Maranham, which still held out, surrendered to the Brazilian squadron under Lord Cochrane, on the 28th of August, for which, and other eminent services, his lordship was created by the emperor Marquis of Maranham.

On the 30th of June, the emperor met with a severe fall from his horse, which broke two or three of his ribs. The democratic faction took advantage of his indisposition, to send both to his majesty and the prime minister threatening letters, purporting that if the latter did not give in his resignation, his life, and even that of the emperor, would not be safe. This attempt of the party to succeed by intimidation totally failed; but they had gained sufficient strength in the assembly to command a majority, on the 29th of July, when the question of the absolute *veto* was discussed, without which royal prerogative the monarchy would have been only a name. Notwithstanding this decision, however, the emperor had spirit and firmness

enough to declare, that he would never put in execution any acts which had not obtained his express sanction. The assembly, on the other hand, seemed determined to carry their point; and on the 9th of August, the emperor thought it necessary to issue a proclamation, in which, while he declared his abhorrence of all despotism, whether that of one or of many, he expressed his determination not tamely to give up his rights and see the kingdom virtually reduced to a democracy.* Matters seemed drawing to a crisis. But the royalists were a majority in the empire, and Don Pedro had on his side the army, the fleet, the marine regiments, and an immense majority of Brazilians.

The month of November brought with it the triumph of the imperial authority. The ministry had been changed. Some turbulent members of the assembly having brought forward several charges against the new ministers, a warm discussion ensued, and the fermentation became so great out of doors, that the public were divided into two parties. The sitting of the 11th of November was still more tumultuous. The emperor, to give the more freedom of discussion to the assembly, had withdrawn the troops from the city; but the anarchy which ensued, attained at last so formidable a height, that the government despatched

* This well-drawn-up paper concludes with the following paragraph. "Believe, then, neither those who flatter the people, nor those who flatter the monarch. Both are actuated only by selfish motives, and under the mask, whether of liberalism or of servilism, wish only to advance their own interests on the ruins of their country. The times in which we live, are full of sad examples. Let what has befallen foreign countries serve you as a lesson. Brazilians, confide in your emperor and perpetual protector. He desires no power that does not belong to him, but he will not suffer that to be usurped which is his right, and which is indispensable to enable him to secure your welfare. Let us await the constitution of the empire, and hope that it may be worthy of us. May the supreme Arbiter of the universe grant us union and tranquillity, strength and perseverance, and the great work of our liberty and our independence will be accomplished."

400 cavalry and infantry, with four pieces of artillery, to surround the assembly, and dissolve the sitting by force. Six or eight deputies were arrested. Don Pedro then mounted his horse, and rode through the city, where he was received with general acclamations. All the houses were illuminated, and public tranquillity was completely re-established. A proclamation was immediately issued, in which the emperor promised to give the nation a constitution that should be worthy of himself and the people of Brazil.

A new legislative (but not constituent) assembly was summoned by a decree of the 17th of November, and in the mean time, the rough draft of the constitution, framed by a special commission, and approved by the emperor, was circulated throughout Brazil. Registers were opened in the capital and in all the provinces to receive the votes, approving or disapproving, of the citizens. On the 25th of March, 1824, the suffrages of the greater part of the provinces having been collected, the emperor himself, in the face of his people, took the oath to observe the charter which he had just granted, and which is now to be considered as the fundamental and definitive law of the new empire.*

We have now brought down the history of Brazil to the era of its definitive organisation as an independent empire, under its present constitutional sovereign. It is not our province to speculate on the possibilities of the future. One thing, however, seems certain, that in no event can Brazil again be brought under the dominion of Portugal. If it could be imagined that the emperor was capable of

* For the above sketch of the history of Brazil, we have been chiefly indebted, in the earlier part, to Southey's History of Brazil, in 3 vols. 4to. The more recent facts are given chiefly on the authority of the documents printed by MM. la Beaumelle and de Beauchamp in their pamphlets already referred to.

betraying the interests of his subjects, (for the conquest of Brazil by any force that Portugal could send out, is a moral impossibility,) the only result of such measures would be to produce a dismemberment of the empire. The attempt to unite the two crowns on the same head, could not, it may safely be affirmed, eventually succeed. How far this immense empire may be capable or incapable of holding together ultimately, composed as it is of parts in some respects so heterogeneous and remote from the seat of government, time will shew. The southern provinces have always manifested an attachment to the monarchical principle and a disposition to coalesce with Rio Janeiro. Bahia, the more ancient capital and an archbishopric, might seem to have rival pretensions to become the seat of government; and there, perhaps, some seeds of jealousy may still lurk. But it is in the more northerly provinces, in particular Pernambuco, Para, and Maranham, that the republican spirit has shewn itself the strongest; and it is with regard to these, that it seems the most problematical, whether Brazil shall long remain an undivided empire, having for its centre the present seat of government at Rio Janeiro.

The high degree of interest attaching to this rising empire in the New World, both in a political and a commercial point of view, has induced us to occupy so large a space with its history, which is comparatively but little known, and some general acquaintance with which is requisite in order to understand its present situation and relations. We now proceed to take a general survey of the country itself.

NATURAL HISTORY, CLIMATE, &c.

THE general aspect of Brazil, as first viewed from the sea, is rugged and mountainous, but, on a nearer approach,

its appearance is highly picturesque and romantic, presenting mountains crowned with gigantic forests, and valleys clothed with perpetual verdure. The land gradually rises as it recedes from the coast, till, at no very great distance from the shore, it reaches the height of from 5 to 6000 feet above the level of the sea. This elevated ridge, which has been termed the Brazilian Andes, stretching from about the tenth to the thirty-second degree of latitude, runs nearly parallel to the coast, with its steepest side towards the sea: it gradually slopes towards the interior of the country, whence it afterwards rises again by a gentle ascent towards the west, till it attains a height varying from 3 to 6000 feet, and then loses itself in those sandy deserts called Campos Parexis, which occupy a large portion of the central regions of South America. These deserts appear to stretch round the sources of the Tapajos, and part of the head waters of the Madera. Near the confines of this barren tract, the land rises first into hills, and then into chains of mountains, which are considered as the highest in Brazil. Here, many of the tributary streams of the Maranham, the Paraguay, and other great rivers that ultimately lose themselves in the Atlantic, have their rise. These mountains not only abound in mines of copper and of iron, but conceal, besides, rich mines of gold, diamonds, and other precious stones. From this elevated group, different chains are prolonged towards the south, in a direction parallel with the coast, under the name of *Serro des Emeraldas* and *Serro do Frio.* Another branch, proceeding from the same plateau, follows a similar direction towards the south: while a third chain, under the name of Matto Grosso, bends to the north-west towards the central plain, and forms the dividing ridge between the waters which flow southward into the Paraguay and the Parana on one side, and those which flow northward into the Toccantines

and the Chingu on the other. Between the Parana and the Paraguay, an extensive chain of mountains intervenes, running from north to south, which diverges, at its termination, into other ranges running from east to west. Various other groups skirt, for a great distance, the banks of the river Toccantines; while another range, one of the most considerable in Brazil, extends towards the northern coasts, and forms a natural division between the provinces of Maranham and Pernambuco.

The vast extent of coast, from the estuary of the mighty Amazons to that of the Plata, is singularly deficient in capes and bays. For more than fifteen degrees of longitude, from point La Tijioca to Cape St. Roque, the shore stretches nearly from east to west without any considerable promontory, and scarcely an inlet of importance, except that in which the town of Maranham stands. From Cape St. Roque to Cape St. Augustine, an extent of about four degrees of latitude, the line of coast is nearly due north and south. It then bends to the south-west, and forms a large sweep before it reaches Cape Frio, in lat. 23° S., in which the small promontory on which Bahia stands, and the bay to the west of that city, are almost the only points that deserve mention. South of Cape Frio, the coast runs nearly west, till it reaches the bay of Rio Janeiro, which forms one of the most complete harbours in the world. Though narrow at its entrance, it extends several miles into the country, and is finely sprinkled with islands. Another bay of nearly the same size washes a part of the western confines of the same province; beyond which, the coast extends more towards the south, without presenting any other inlet of consequence. Mr. Luccock was led, on an examination of the coast of Rio Grande, to think that the original line of coast was to the west of the Lake Mirim and the Lagoa dos Patos, to the village of Sta. Maria,

near Laguna, and that all to the east of this line is made ground, formed by sand driven up by the ocean.

The majestic river, which was formerly considered as the northern boundary of Brazil, known by the names of the Amazon (or Amazons), the Maranham (Maranon or Maragnon), and the Orellana, is supposed to be the largest river in the world. It is formed by two large rivers, the Tunguragua, which issues from the lake Lauricocha, in Peru, in lat. 10° 29′ S., and the Ucayale, formed by streams which have been traced to the 16th and 18th degrees of S. latitude. These two rivers, uniting on the confines of Peru, form the mighty Amazons, which running eastward more than 1000 miles, then takes a more northerly direction, and having received the waters of nearly two hundred tributary streams, falls into the Atlantic by eighty-four channels. Reckoning all its windings, it is computed to be between 4 and 5000 miles in length; at its mouth, it is said to be 180 miles broad, and its depth is unknown. It has been navigated to its confluence with the Pachitea, between the 8th and 9th degrees of S. latitude, where its current is gentle; and, by the Rio Negro, one of its branches, it communicates with the Cassiquiari, which falls into the Oronoco. Its shores are covered with impenetrable woods, the haunt of tigers, leopards, boars, and innumerable apes, while an immense variety of birds of the most beautiful plumage enliven these vast solitudes. The manetu and tortoise abound upon the banks of this river and its tributaries, and they swarm with alligators and water-serpents.

The principal of the streams which fall into the river Amazons, is the Rio Madera, or River of Forests, formed by the union of several streams issuing from the eastern slope of the Andes on the borders of Peru, which flowing towards the E. and N.E., unite before they reach

the 10th degree of S. latitude. Their confluent waters, after several magnificent falls, reach the level country; whence the Madera rolls on a vast body of water for a course of about 2000 miles, forming, for a great part of the distance, the north-western boundary of the Brazilian dominions, and joins the Amazons in lat. 3° 24′ 18″ S. Nearly parallel to this, and flowing in the same direction, but further eastward, are the Tapajos, the Chingu, and the Toccantines, all rising from the same central regions; the former two in the province of Matto Grosso, the latter in the captaincy of Goyaz, in about lat. 19° S. The Tapajos takes a northerly course for more than 600 miles between the Chingu and the Madera, (its whole course being computed to be 900 miles in length,) and falls into the Maranham in lat. 2° 24′ 50″ S.; long. 55° W. The Chingu has a course of 1200 miles, the navigation of which is frequently interrupted by cataracts. The Toccantines, the largest of the three, and almost equal to the mighty Amazons itself, is joined by the Araguaya in lat. 6°; and the united stream, after a course of 300 miles, falls into the southern estuary of the Amazons in lat. 1° 40′ S., about 20 leagues W. of the city of Para. Its whole length is upwards of 900 miles.

The great range of mountains which skirts the shore, prevents any rivers from attaining the ocean immediately, except such as spring from the eastern side of that ridge; but several noble rivers of the interior, by a circuitous sweep, mingle their waters with the Atlantic. The Paraiba discharges itself from the northern coast in lat. 6° 57′ S., long. 42° W. The Rio Francisco, which has its rise about the 20th degree of S. latitude, after running northward for a considerable distance along the great longitudinal valley at the foot of the Brazilian Andes, turns at length to the east, and, separating Pernambuco from Seregippe, enters the sea in about the 11th parallel

of S. latitude, completing a course of upwards of 1000 miles. This is the largest river of Brazil that is unconnected either with the Amazons or the Plata. One of the three Rio Grandes rises in the province of Minas Geraes, and, after a long course to the N.E., falls into the Atlantic a few miles N. of Porto Seguro, in lat. 15° 26′ S. Another Rio Grande waters the province of Bahia, and joins the Rio Francisco. A third, which gives name to the province of Rio Grande do Sul, reaches the Atlantic about the 32d parallel of S. latitude. Besides these, the Rio Doce, which separates Espiritu Santo from Seguro, the Rio dos Ilheos, and some others of less note, find their way from the western ridge to the sea.

The immense estuary of La Plata is the great drain for all the central waters south of the tributary streams of the Amazons. The land which divides the waters of the Amazons from those of the Plata, rises to its greatest height between the 13th and 14th parallels of latitude. Here the Paraguay (or the Plata) has its rise, its sources approaching, it is said, within a few miles of those of the Tapajos, the Chingu, and the Toccantines, which run to the north. This immense river runs a southerly course of about 1800 miles, assuming, after its confluence with the Parana in lat. 27° 25′ S., the name of the Plata (Silver River): at Buenos Ayres, nearly 200 miles from its mouth, it is about 30 miles broad; and, from Cape St. Anthony on the one side, to Cape St. Maria on the other, its estuary is 150 miles wide. Rocks, sand-banks, shoals, shallows, and occasional torrents, render its navigation very difficult and dangerous; and the only port on its shores that is adapted for the safety of ships of considerable burthen, is that of Monte Video. The Parana is formed by the accumulated waters of several extensive valleys. From the east, it receives all the waters of the western declivity of the mountainous ridge which runs

parallel with the coast. Its head waters approach within less than 100 miles of the eastern shore, from which their course is westerly into the interior, until they turn towards the south. It flows into the Plata, on its eastern bank, about 700 miles from its mouth. To the southward of the Parana is the Uruguay, which rises, Mr. Luccock says, within 50 miles of the Atlantic shore; yet, its sources are nearly 6000 feet above the level of the sea. It is composed of two streams which descend from the mountains towards the interior in lat. 28° and 26° S. After collecting various other waters, it traverses a vast extent of country, and then, winding to the south, falls into the Plata near Buenos Ayres, completing a course of above 1000 miles. Its navigation is difficult. These three rivers have, in the course of ages, produced some of the most extensive alluvial plains which exist on the face of the globe. In the rainy seasons, the flat country through which they flow, is inundated to an amazing extent. Not far from Corrientes, where the Parana and the Paraguay meet at right angles, is the lake Ibera, or Ybyra (the low country), which, in the dry season, covers an extent of about 150 square leagues, but, about a month after the rains have commenced in the upper country, that is, in December, extends over not less than 2000 square leagues. It is formed by the waters of the Parana, but is said to communicate, at the rainy period, both with the Paraguay and the Uruguay. The lake of Xarys, in Paraguay, which lies more to the northward, is still larger: it is an expansion of the Paraguay, being manifestly formed by the channel's being too narrow to carry off the waters as they come down from the upper country. The great lake of Patos, which stretches about 150 miles nearly parallel to the coast, in the province of Rio Grande do Sul, will be noticed in another place.

A country of such immense extent, and of so diversified a surface, must of necessity be marked by great variety both of soil and climate. In the northern parts, which are situated in the centre of the torrid zone, the air of the lower tracts near the banks of the river Maranham, is sultry and oppressive; but even here, vegetation is kept in perfect vigour by the peculiar humidity of the atmosphere. In these regions there is little distinction of seasons: the ground is constantly covered with flowers, the foliage is evergreen, and the abundant dews, the shade of the forests, and the delicious coolness of the nights, are represented as giving the country the appearance of perpetual spring. Near the coast, where the trade-wind constantly blows, the beneficial effects which attend it, after having swept over the breadth of the Atlantic, are hourly experienced in the refreshing coolness it imparts to the atmosphere of these otherwise sultry regions. The northern provinces, however, frequently suffer from the want of rain during the dry season. In ascending towards the sources of the great rivers, the temperature is modified by the elevation of the ground, as well as in receding from the equator. On the Campos Parexis and other similar situations, the aridity of the soil and the reflection of the solar rays render the heat intolerable; but, within many of the elevated districts of the interior, fertile valleys are found enjoying a temperate and salubrious climate, where the vegetables and fruits of Europe are matured in the vicinity of those indigenous to a tropical soil. Of this nature is the climate towards Minas Geraes and St. Paul. Towards the southern extremity of Brazil, as well as in the higher mountainous districts, the air is still colder, and the soil produces European grain in great perfection. Brazil is generally considered healthy. The west wind, indeed, passing over vast marshy forests, is frequently found unhealthy in the

interior; but these blasts are much corrected by the influence of the aromatic plants which abound in the woods, and fill the air with their fragrance. The northern provinces are subject to heavy rains, variable winds, tornadoes, storms, and the utmost fury of the elements; but the southern regions are blessed with a settled and temperate climate, and are esteemed peculiarly salubrious.

As far as the soil has yet been explored, it appears to be highly fertile. The whole extent of the cultivated lands, however, has recently been stated at scarcely 20,000 square miles, which is not a hundred and fiftieth part of the whole surface. The interior consists, in many parts, of one continuous forest: at a little distance from the coast, the country, in some parts, is covered with numerous varieties of the palm-tree, among which is a remarkable species with long, serrated, lancet-formed leaves, composed of innumerable fibres, which rival silk both in fineness and in strength. The sandy soils of the coast are turned to account by plantations of the cocoa-tree, which grows here thicker and taller than in the East Indies. The Brazilians say, that this tree affords them both food and shelter. Of the trunk and the leaves their huts are built; of its fibrous roots baskets are made, and cordage of the outward husk; its fruit supplies meat and drink; and an excellent oil is obtained by skimming the juice which may be pressed from the pulp. The cocoa is in general use in cookery among all ranks; and it forms one of the chief articles of internal trade: elegant cups are made of the shell. The carrapato, or castor-tree, is also an indigenous production; it is much cultivated for the sake of the oil extracted from the seed, which is in general use for lamps and other purposes: it is frequently to be seen growing spontaneously. The ibiripitanga, or Brazil-wood tree, called in Pernambuco, the *pao da rainha* (queen's wood), on account of its being a government monopoly, is now rarely to be seen

within many leagues of the coast, owing to the improvident manner in which it has been cut down by the government agents, without any regard being paid to the size of the tree or to its cultivation. It is not a lofty tree: at a short distance from the ground, innumerable branches spring forth and extend in every direction in a straggling, irregular, and unpleasing manner. The leaves are small and not luxuriant; the wood is very hard and heavy, takes a high polish, and sinks in water: the only valuable portion of it is the heart, as the outward coat of wood has not any peculiarity.* Besides these, we may enumerate among the vegetable productions of Brazil, the cedar, the wild cinnamon-tree, and the jackaranda or rose-wood, valuable for cabinet work; the tatajuba or fustic, yielding a yellow dye; the Brazilian myrtle, a beautiful shrub, distinguished by its shining silver bark; the sippipira, resembling the teak of India; the peroba, oraubu, and louro, resembling species of oak and larch; log-wood; mahogany, and a variety of forest-trees, invaluable for the purposes of ship-building. The productions of the soil are cotton, sugar, tobacco, rice, coffee, maize, beans, cassava-root,† bananas,

* The name of this wood is derived from *brasas* (or *brazas*), a glowing fire or coal. Its botanical name is Cæsalpinia Brasiletto: it belongs to the genus Lomentaceæ, in Linnæus's nat. order; and is a leguminous plant, of the class Decandria Monogynia. The leaves are pinnated: the flowers are white, papilionaceous, growing in a pyramidal spike. One species has flowers variegated with red. The branches are slender and full of small prickles. There are nine species. The colour produced from this wood, is greatly improved by a solution of tin in aqua regia, which, when mixed with the aqueous tincture, affords a beautiful precipitate of a purplish crimson, substituted sometimes for lake. It is used for dyeing silk what is called *false* crimson, to distinguish it from that produced by cochineal. It is indigenous to both the East and the West Indies, and is the same as Sapan wood.

† Maize, beans, and cassava root, are the principal food of the inhabitants, and are therefore very generally cultivated. Sugar, previously to the discovery of the mines, formed the principal riches

wheat, mandioc, ipecacuanha, ginger, pepper, yams, oranges, figs, nitre, diamonds and other precious stones, gold, silver, and most of the metals.*

The woods of Brazil are full of rapacious animals, among which are the tiger-cat; the hyæna; the saratu, an animal about the size of a fox, but much more ferocious; the jaguar, the terror of the Brazilian peasantry; the sloth; and the porcupine. The farmers are much annoyed by ounces, which are exceedingly ravenous; they are of various colours, some black, others brown red: they are hunted with dogs. Wild hogs are common, as well as an animal called the anta or tapira, which in form resembles a hog, but is the size of a heifer; it is the largest of the quadrupeds, is timid and harmless, feeds like a horse, but, being amphibious, swims and dives in an extraordinary manner, and is capable of remaining for a long time at the bottom of lakes and pools without respiring. When killed by the hunters, its flesh is generally eaten, and differs little from that of the ox. The domestic animals are generally of the European species, and were introduced by the first settlers. Horses are common, and vast herds of cattle range over some parts of the country, particularly the wide

of the country. Rice forms the second object of trade in Maranham.

* There seems no reason to doubt that wine might be produced abundantly in Brazil. At Bahia, the most delicious grapes are said to have been reared in the gardens of individuals; but the want of industry has prevented their cultivation from becoming general. The Portuguese government, adhering to their illiberal system of monopoly, discouraged and even prohibited the cultivation of the vine, lest it should interfere with the commercial interests of the mother country; but Mr. Luccock states that, on the emigration of the court, the vine was introduced into Rio de Janeiro by the king,—with what success we are not informed. An experiment has also been made to cultivate the tea-plant, which has been supposed to be indigenous to Brazil. For further particulars respecting the productions of the country, the reader is referred to the description of the provinces.

ilanos of the southern regions. Among the innumerable species of birds, the humming-bird, the least of the feathered race, is common in Brazil. The largest species found here is the emu, or American ostrich; and the most ferocious is the vulture. The most formidable reptiles are the boa constrictor, the corral snake, the sorrocuco, and the jarraraca, all of them venomous and much dreaded by the natives. In the marshy countries of the south, the boa attains the length of thirty feet, and in thickness equals the body of a man, or the trunk of a large tree. One was killed on the borders of a lake by some travellers in 1819, which had just gorged a young bull.

No situation can be better adapted for the whale fishery than the coast of Brazil, many parts of which abound in these animals. Some are killed by large boats from the shore; but there is no proper provision made, either for taking the whales or for extracting the oil. This might otherwise be rendered an important branch of commerce.

POPULATION, &c.

THE free population of Brazil consists of 1. Europeans; 2. White persons born in Brazil, who claim to be distinguished as Brazilians; 3. Mulattoes, that is, the mixed caste between whites and blacks; 4. Mamalucoes, the mixed caste between whites and Indians; 5. Indians in a domesticated state, who are generally called Cabocloes; 6. Indians in a savage state, who are called Tapuyas;* 7. free

* This applies to the more northern provinces, to which Mr. Koster, whom we follow, chiefly refers. The Tapuyas or Taperiyas were the most noted of the Brazilian tribes in the northern districts, and had extended themselves for a considerable way along the coast. The Topinambas had their chief settlements in Bahia. The Molopagues and Motayes had established themselves on the river Paraiba. The Botocudoes, or Aymores, were found in Minas Geraes and Porto Seguro; the Tamoyos, in Rio Janeiro; the Coroardoes, in Minas Geraes; the Guaycurues, in Matto Grosso; and the Puries, in Espiritu Santo.

Negroes born in Brazil; 8. manumitted Africans; 9. Mestizoes, the mixed caste between Indians and Negroes. The slave population consists of Africans, creole negroes, mulattoes, and mestizoes. In Brazil, unlike the Spanish and the English colonies, there is hardly any political division of castes, and very few of those galling and degrading distinctions, which have been made by all other nations in the management of their colonies. This was not intended by the mother country, but has arisen from the circumstances connected with the colonisation of this vast territory, which rendered intermarriage with the natives inevitable. It is true, that, according to the old code, people of colour are not eligible to some of the chief offices of government, nor can they become members of the priesthood; but, from the mildness of the laws, the mixed castes have gained ground considerably, and the regulations against them are evaded, or rather have become obsolete.* "Perhaps," remarks Mr. Koster, "the heroic conduct of Cameram and Henrique Diaz, the Indian and negro chieftains, in the famous and most interesting contest between the Pernambucans and the Dutch, and the honours subsequently granted by the crown of Portugal to both of them, may have led to the exaltation of the general character of the much injured varieties of the human species of which they are members." Marriages between white men and women of colour are by no means rare, and the circumstance is scarcely observed upon, unless the woman is decidedly of dark colour, for even a considerable tinge will pass for white. What is remarkable, notwithstand-

* "A mulatto enters into holy orders," says Mr. Koster, "or is appointed a magistrate, his papers stating him to be a white man, but his appearance plainly denoting the contrary. In conversing on one occasion with a man of colour, who was in my service, I asked him if a certain *capitam-mor* was not a mulatto? He answered, "He was, but is not now." I begged him to explain, when he added, "Can a *capitam-mor* be a mulatto?"

ing the relationship of the mulattoes on one side to the black race, they consider themselves superior to the mamalucoes, taking pride in being wholly unconnected with the Indians: even the mestizo tries to pass for a mulatto. The mamalucoes, on the other hand, whether from a consciousness of being of free birth on both sides, or from residing for the most part in the interior, where government is more loose, appear to have more independence, and to pay less deference to a white, than the mulatto. They are handsomer than the mulattoes, and the women of this caste surpass in beauty all others of the country.

The creole negroes form, in the northern provinces, a numerous and distinct race; they have handsome persons, are brave and hardy, obedient to the whites, and willing to please; but are easily affronted, and the slightest allusion to their colour enrages them to a high degree. They will sometimes reply: "A negro I am, but always upright." They have their exclusive regiments, as well as the mulattoes, of which every officer and soldier must be perfectly black. There are two of these regiments for the province of Pernambuco, distinguished by the names of Old Henriques and New Henriques, in honour of Henrique Diaz, the famous negro chieftain. Neither privates nor officers receive any pay: their neat soldier-like appearance indicates, therefore, a certain degree of wealth among them. The uniform is white cloth, turned up with scarlet. On gala days, the superior black officers, in their white uniforms, pay their respects to the government exactly in the same manner as officers of any other caste. Negroes are excluded, however, from the priesthood,* and from the civil offices which the mulatto may obtain through

* Mr. Luccock states that, on the re-establishment of religious brotherhoods at Rio, subsequently to the emigration of the court, "even negroes were allowed to put on the habit of an order, to carry a silver wand, and to appear in procession with princes and priests."

evasion of the law. They are also disqualified for serving in any regiments except their own; but this regulation protects them from the persecutions which the other castes suffer in recruiting seasons.*

SLAVES.

THE laws respecting slaves are peculiarly humane, and their treatment in general is far from severe. The Indian slavery has been for many years abolished; the individuals now in bondage in Brazil, are Africans and their descendants on both sides, or mulattoes whose mothers are of African origin; for no line is drawn at which a near approach to the colour and blood of the whites entitles the child whose mother is a slave, to freedom. Mr. Koster saw several persons to all appearance of white origin, still held in slavery. Slaves in this country, however, have many advantages over those in the British colonies. The Brazilian slave is taught the religion of his master, and his master believes in that religion. Hopes are held out of manumission by means of his own exertions, and those hopes are not defeated by laws which amount to a virtual interdict. The numerous holidays of the Catholic calendar afford him thirty-five days in the year besides Sundays, to work for himself; and few masters, Mr. Koster says, venture to deprive their slaves of these intervals. The slave can oblige his master, according to the laws, to manumit him on tendering the sum for which he was purchased, or for which he might be sold; and though this regulation, like every other that is framed in favour of slaves, is liable to be evaded, public opinion is in general found sufficient to protect him from

* The term *Senhor* or *Senhora*, is made use of to all free persons, whites, mulattoes, and blacks; and in speaking to a freeman of whatever class or colour, the manner of address is the same.

injustice. A considerable number of slaves are manumitted at the death of their masters, and persons of large property frequently set a few of them at liberty during their lifetime. A great number of infant slaves are set free at their baptism, either by the sponsors or in cases where the father is free: the master is obliged to manumit the infant at the baptismal font, on the price of a newborn child being presented to him.* The Africans who are imported from Angola, are baptized in lots before they leave their own shores, and, on their arrival in Brazil, are taught the doctrines of the church. Those imported from other parts, arrive unbaptized, and must be first taught certain prayers, for the acquirement of which one year is allowed to the master before he is obliged to present the slave at the parish church. The law is not always strictly adhered to as to time, but it is seldom, if ever, evaded altogether. The slaves have their religious brotherhoods as well as the free persons. They have also a Christian goddess of their own in the person of Our Lady of the Rosary, who sometimes condescends to be painted with a black face and hands. They are regularly married according to the forms of the Catholic church, the banns being published in the same manner as those of free persons. If a slave marries a free woman, the children are free. The master's consent is required, but the Brazilians encourage marriages among their slaves. "I have seen many happy couples," says Mr. Koster, "as happy at least as slaves can be, with large families of children rising round them." Cases of cruelty and hardship are not unfrequent; but, on the whole, the slaves in Brazil are incomparably better circumstanced than those in the British islands. Regulations which Protestant Englishmen have declared to be impracticable, or ridiculed

* This was, in Pernambuco, 20,000 *mil-reis* (5*l.*).

as absurd, have been adopted with the happiest moral results by the Brazilians, under the guidance of no better motives, perhaps, than religious bigotry and superstition. "Still they are slaves," says Mr. Koster, "and in this word are included, great misery, great degradation, great misfortune." The negroes whose condition is the hardest, are those employed in the mines, particularly the diamond mines. It was enacted by one of the Portuguese monarchs, that, after remaining in bondage ten years, they should be entitled to their liberty; but, though this law remains unrepealed, its execution is evaded.

The Indians will be more particularly noticed hereafter. There remains to be mentioned another distinct race, the ciganoes,* the gipsies of Brazil, of whom Mr. Koster gives the following account. "I frequently heard of these people, but never had an opportunity of seeing any of them. Parties of ciganoes were in the habit of appearing formerly once every year at the village of Pasmado and other places in that part of the country; but the late governor of the province was inimical to them, and attempts having been made to apprehend some of them, their visits were discontinued. They are represented as being a people of a brownish cast, with features which resemble those of white persons, and as being tall and handsome. They wander from place to place in parties of men, women, and children, exchanging, buying, and selling horses and gold and silver trinkets. The women travel on horseback, sitting between the panniers of the loaded horses, and the young ones are placed within the panniers among the baggage. The men are excellent horsemen, and although the packhorses may be overburthened, these fellows will only accommodate matters

* "This word, *ciganos*, is without doubt derived from *Egyptianos*: the word *gitanos* is also used as a name for these people.

by riding slowly upon their own horses, and never think of dividing the loads more equally; but they preserve themselves and the animals upon which they ride, quite unencumbered. They are said to be unmindful of all religious observances, and never to hear mass or confess their sins. It is likewise said, that they never marry out of their own nation." Future travellers in Brazil will do well to verify this information, and to ascertain how far the ciganoes are to be identified with the ubiquitous race to which they bear apparently so strong a resemblance.

The costume of the Brazilians is, for the most part, that of Portugal. The gorgeous magnificence in which the wealthy indulge, is said to be accompanied with a total neglect of internal neatness and cleanliness. When visiting, or on a holiday, they are fond of an excess of embroidery and spangles on their waistcoat, and lace to their linen: shoe and knee buckles of solid gold are common, and they are addicted to every species of finery. At home, a gown or thin jacket is substituted. The usual dress of the ladies is a single petticoat over a worked chemise: stockings are rarely used. When attending mass, a deep black silk mantle, worn over the head, conceals the transparent costume beneath. In some places, the European dress is adopted by ladies of rank. Further details will occur in noticing the peculiar customs of the several provinces.

PROVINCIAL DIVISIONS.

GEOGRAPHERS have widely differed in their accounts of the provincial divisions of Brazil; but, including the recent accessions to the empire, there appear to be no fewer than twenty-two distinct provinces. These, beginning from the north, are as follows:

Maritime Provinces.

1. Guiana.
2. Para.
3. Maranham.
4. Seara.
5. Rio Grande, North.
6. Paraiba.
7. Pernambuco. *
8. Seregippe d'el Rey.
9. Bahia.†
10. Porto Seguro.
11. Espiritu Santo.
12. Rio de Janeiro.
13. St. Paulo.‡
14. Sta. Catharina.‖
15. Rio Grande, South.

Interior Provinces.

16. Solimoens.
17. Piauhy.
18. Matto Grosso.
19. Goyaz.
20. Minas Geraes.
21. Parana.
22. Uruguay.

In proceeding to take a survey of these several divisions, we begin with that which contains the present seat of government.

PROVINCE OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

THE province of Rio de Janeiro, which derives its name from the magnificent port of its capital, § is bounded on the north by Espiritu Santo, from which it is divided by the river Capabuan; and by Minas Geraes, from which it is divided by the rivers Preto and Paraiba, and, in part,

* The old captaincy of Itamarica is included in this province.

† This province includes the old captaincy of Dos Ilheos.

‡ Including half of the old captaincy of St. Vincente, and part of St. Amaro. The remainder of St. Vincente is comprised in the province of Rio de Janeiro.

‖ Comprising the greater part of the old and short-lived captaincy of St. Amaro.

§ The Aborigines are said to have called the bay, on account of its narrow entrance, *Nelhero-hy*, or *Nithero-hy*; that is, hidden water. The bay is so concealed by mountains, that it is only seen on arriving in front of the inlet.

by the Serra da Manliqueira. On the west, it borders on St. Paulo; and on the south and the east it has the Atlantic Ocean. It includes half of the ancient capitania of St. Vincente, together with a portion of territory formerly belonging to Espiritu Santo. It is estimated to be sixty leagues in length from east to west, near its northern extremity, and fifty near its southern; and to have twenty-three leagues of medium width.

The organ mountains (Serra dos Orgoas), so called on account of the resemblance which the pyramidal heads bear, in various parts, to the front of an organ, divide the province into two parts; northern or *Serra-accina* (mountains above), and southern, or *Beira-mar* (sea-coast). These again are subdivided; the former into the districts of Paraiba Nova and Canto Gallo, the latter into Rio Janeiro, Ilha Grande, Cape Frio, and Goytacazes. The greater part of the province is mountainous. The only considerable river is the Paraiba,* which proceeds from a small lake in the southern part of the Serra da Bocania, a continuation of the Serra dos Orgoas: it flows into the captaincy of St. Paulo; and, after a long and winding course, re-enters the province in which it rose, and disembogues in its eastern part. The body of its waters is not proportionate, however, to the length of its course.

Lakes, however, are numerous: the most remarkable are, the Jacaré-pagua, and the Roderigo de Freytas. The *Augra dos Reys* (King's Bay) is larger and scarcely less beautiful than that of Rio de Janeiro. Many islands are scattered over it. The principal of these, Ilha Grande (Great Isle), is about four miles long, and two in width, and has many good harbours, the best of which has obtained the remarkable name of O Seio de Habraham

* The Rio de Janeiro is not a river, but only the name of the salt bay or gulf, which was mistaken by De Sousa for the mouth of a river.

(Abraham's bosom). The island contains about three thousand inhabitants.

The province of Rio contains two cities and twelve towns; but, with the exception of the metropolis, they are all small and insignificant.

The city of St. Sebastian, now universally called Rio, the capital of the empire, is situated on the western shore of the great bay from which it takes its name, and which extends from the city northwards into the continent, about three times as far as the distance to the anchorage. It occupies the north-east part of a tongue of land of an irregularly quadrangular shape. The most easterly point is the *Punta do Calabouço:* the most northerly is the *Armazem do Sal*, opposite to which is the little *Ilha das Cobras*. The oldest and most important part of the city is built between these two points, along the shore, in the form of an oblong quadrangle, lying N. W. and S. E. The ground is, for the most part, level and low; but, at the northern end, are five hills, which come so near the sea as to leave room for only one street by the sea-side; while towards the south and south-east, the city is commanded by several promontories of the Corcovado. The more ancient part of the city is traversed by eight narrow, parallel streets, crossed by many others at right angles. The Campo de S. Anna, a large square to the west of the old city, separates it from the new town. The latter, which has risen for the most part since the royal emigration in 1808, is connected with the south-western quarter, or *bairro de Mato-porcos*, by the bridge of S. Diogo, thrown over a salt water inlet called *Sacco d'Alferes*; and on the north-west, the extensive suburb of Catumbi leads to the royal palace of S. Cristovâo. Mato-porcos lies immediately under the lower eminences of the Corcovado. On its summit, the church of *Nossa Senhora da Gloria* forms a conspicuous object, commanding the southern part of

the city. Further southward, detached rows of houses occupy the two semicircular bays of Catête and Bota Fogo, and single houses are scattered in the picturesque valleys which intersect the Corcovado: the most pleasant of these is the valley of Laranjeiras. The hills along the north-eastern bank are partly covered with large buildings. The ancient college of the Jesuits, the convent of the Benedictines, the episcopal palace, and the *Forte da Conceiçao*, have, from the sea, a grand appearance. The residence formerly occupied by the viceroys, which, after the arrival of the court of Lisbon, was enlarged by the addition of the Carmelite convent, and fitted up for the royal family, stands in the plain. Altogether, the approach to Rio is represented by all travellers to be extremely picturesque.

The first land that is seen on approaching the coast from Europe, is Cape Frio, distant between sixty and seventy miles from Rio. From this point to the city, a succession of interesting objects presents themselves, among which is seen the lofty peak of the Corcovado, to which the people of Rio repair for the extensive prospect it commands. The entrance of the bay is protected chiefly by the fort of Santa Cruz, where all vessels bring to, in order that the telegraph may announce to what country they belong. It is built on the *Pico*, a steep point of granite rock on the east side, and opposite to it are the batteries of S. João and S. Theodosio: the strait formed by these two points, which is only 5000 feet wide, is also commanded by a fort on the low, rocky island, *Ilha da Lagem*, situated almost in the middle of the entrance. In the interior of the bay, the most important works are the Fort de Villegagnon (so named from the French adventurer), and that of Ilha das Cobras, both on small islands not far from the city. On the latter island state criminals are confined. In the city itself, besides the *Forte da Conceiçao*,

already mentioned, towards the north-west part of it, there are the batteries of *Monte* on the south-east; and the inlet of Bota Fogo is covered by the lines of *Praya-vermelha*. The harbour is one of the most capacious, commodious, and beautiful in the world. The immediate back-ground of the city is formed by beautiful green hills, covered with woods, and interspersed with villas and convents; while the foreground is enlivened by the vessels of all nations. The bay contains nearly a hundred islands. From either shore rise lofty and well-clad mountains, terminating, in some places, in abrupt precipices of the wildest and most romantic forms. At their base, white cottages and houses are scattered amid patches of cultivation, and narrow valleys of orange-trees wind among the mountains. Every little eminence has its church or its fort; and innumerable boats flitting about the bay, and mingling with the shipping, add animation and interest to the scene. The air is soft, the sky generally cloudless, and every breeze bears over the calm waters the fragrance of the orange and the lemon. Such is the glowing language in which modern travellers describe the first appearance of the Brazilian capital.

"If any person," says Dr. Von Spix, who visited Rio in 1817,* "considering that this is a new continent, discovered only three centuries ago, should fancy that nature must be here still entirely rude, mighty, and unconquered, he would believe, at least here in the capital, that he was in some other part of the globe: so much has the influence of the civilization of ancient and enlightened Europe effaced the character of an American wilderness in this point of the colony. The language, manners, architecture, and the influx of the productions of all parts of the

* Travels in Brazil, in the years 1817—1820, undertaken by command of H. M. the King of Bavaria. By Dr. J. B. Von Spix and Dr. C. V. P. Von Martius. 2 vols. 8vo. London, 1824.

globe, give a European exterior to Rio de Janeiro. But the traveller is soon reminded that he is in a strange quarter of the world, by the varied crowd of negroes and mulattoes who every where meet him, as soon as he sets his foot on shore. To us, this sight was less agreeable than it was striking. The degraded, brutish nature of these half-naked, unfortunate men, offends the feelings of the European who has but just quitted the seat of polite manners and agreeable forms."

Far more has been done for this beautiful portion of the new world by nature, than by man. The style of architecture in Rio is, in general, mean, resembling that of the old part of Lisbon; and though this town has always ranked as the most important in Brazil, or as second only to Bahia at the time that the latter was the seat of government, yet, it is only since the emigration of the court, that it has assumed the character of a European city. Some idea of what Rio *was*, may be gathered from the improvements which are mentioned by Mr. Luccock as having taken place, at the period of his second visit to the capital in 1813, in the course of the preceding five years. The city had been greatly enlarged; the old streets greatly improved in cleanliness, and the houses in neatness; the roads cleared and widened; and villas and gardens had begun to adorn the vicinity. "An increase of domestic comfort," he adds, "had arisen from the establishment of a market for cattle without the city, and of several markets for vegetables and fruits within it; from a more abundant and regular supply of fish, and the more free use of mutton; from greater care with respect to the quality of meat, and the cleanliness of the places where it was slaughtered and exposed to sale. Craftsmen of different descriptions had made their appearance; among them, so many smiths, that *it was no longer difficult to get a horse shod.* Mills for grinding corn had been much

improved, and bread was come more into use. Charcoal was manufactured, and, for cooking, introduced into the houses. Nuisances were more readily removed, and even scavengers were now and then seen in the streets." *

* Notes on Rio de Janeiro, &c., by John Luccock, 4to. London, 1820, p. 254. The following amusing account is given of the state of the arts in Rio only so far back as 1808.

"All the arts were practised in the most formal and tedious way. Every workman deemed himself initiated into some mystery, which none but his own fraternity could comprehend. Carpenters have expressed astonishment when they have seen an Englishman take up a saw, and use it with no less dexterity, and with greater speed, than themselves. There was as little difficulty in rivalling the skill of many workmen, as their execution. So ignorant and stupid were they, that it was frequently necessary to form them a rough model of the article which they were required to make, and to go from shop to shop before one could be found willing to undertake it. I have even been told, that what I wanted could not be executed by human ingenuity, although it was, perhaps, one of the most common instruments in domestic use. To this, white men, who were mechanics, added another folly; every one of them thought himself too much a gentleman to work in public, and that he would be degraded if seen carrying the smallest burden, even the implements of his calling, along the streets. The silly pride and formal self-importance which pervaded all ranks of Brazilian society, were, in this class of men, singularly absurd and ridiculous.

"An instance or two will best illustrate this trait of character. It was necessary to open a lock, of which I had lost the key; and the skill requisite to pick it was so rare, that the master and waiter of the hotel where I then lodged, were greatly perplexed with my inquiries, at what place it was to be found. At length they advised me to apply to an English carpenter, who had been settled in Rio about two years, and employed several men, one of whom he requested to go with me,—for then masters did not venture to command;—assuring me that the man would execute what I wanted. He detained me a long time, but, to compensate for the delay, made his appearance at last in full dress, with a cocked hat, shoe and knee buckles, and other corresponding paraphernalia. At the door of the house he still loitered, wishing to hire some black man to carry his hammer, chisel, and another small instrument. I suggested that they were light, and proposed to carry a part or the whole of them myself; but this would have been as great a practical solecism as using his own hands. The gentleman waited

Among the nuisances which had been removed, were the gloomy projections from the upper windows, called *jealousies*, which have given way, by the king's command, for open balconies. These jealousies were raised on platforms of stone two and a half feet broad, and extended to the top of the window. They were formed of lattice-work of a fanciful pattern, divided into pannels or compartments, some of which were fitted up with hinges at the top, so as to form a sort of flap, which, when opened a little way, allowed persons in the balcony to look down into the street without being seen themselves. They gave to the fronts of the houses a dull, heavy, and suspicious appearance. The ostensible motive for their re-

patiently, until a negro appeared; then made his bargain, and proceeded in due state, followed by his temporary servant. The task was soon finished, by breaking the lock, instead of picking it; when the man of importance, making me a profound bow, stalked off with his follower.

"Another anecdote of a similar spirit appears among my notes. I give it here, though its hero did not belong exactly to the class of mechanics. I was on the eve of leaving Rio, and waiting with great anxiety for the packet, being convinced that it must bring me information of the most interesting kind. When it arrived, I waited upon the superintendant of the post-office, and requested that the expected letter might be delivered to me; but the bag had not yet got thither, and appeared to have met with some unnecessary detention. I therefore posted away to the British consul's office, and there learned that it had been sent from thence a considerable time before. Going down the stairs, I observed the Portuguese servant standing at the door, with a small parcel in his hand, of whom I inquired whether that was the mail from England; he replied that it was, and that he had been long waiting to hire some one to carry it after him to the post-office, which was about two hundred yards distant. I was in no humour at that time to bear with such pompous folly, and after uttering some hasty abuse, which had been better spared, snatched the parcel from his hand, and carried it off at a pace seldom witnessed in a Brazilian city, the man following, and muttering all the way, 'os Ingleses sao diabos,' —'the English are devils.' I was readily admitted at the office, and favoured with the expected letter."—*Notes, &c.* pp. 106, 107.

moval was to improve the appearance of the city: the real cause was said to be an apprehension that, sooner or later, these jealousies might become ambuscades for assassins, who, unseen and unsuspected, might thence discharge the fatal bullet.

When the court first arrived at the metropolis of Brazil, the city was circumscribed within very narrow boundaries. At that period, its population was not a hundred thousand. But upwards of twenty thousand Europeans accompanied the court; and the natural consequence was, that Brazilian manners gave way to those of Europe. A royal military academy was founded in 1810, and skilful mechanics of all countries were encouraged. The library arranged in the edifice belonging to the *Terçeiros da Ordem do Cosmo* is said to contain seventy thousand volumes, which the king brought with him from Portugal: the public have admission to it during the greater part of the day. The stimulus given to commerce diffused a considerable degree of opulence; and the ambassadors from the European powers, who had accompanied the court, with other wealthy foreigners, introduced a luxury and refinement of manners to which Rio had hitherto been a stranger. In 1818, the number both of Portuguese and Brazilian inhabitants had still further increased; and the population both of the capital and of the interior was swelled by emigrants from the Spanish provinces, from the United States of the North, from England, France, Sweden, and Germany. Conveniences now fell more within the reach of the common people: the markets were better supplied. White servants were more generally seen; and domestic slaves were more carefully selected and better clothed, looked more cleanly and healthy, and appeared more happy. Many mechanics, chiefly French, are now settled at Rio, and are encouraged by the government. "The European stranger,"

says Dr. Von Spix, "is astonished at the number of gold and silver smiths and jewellers, who, like the other tradesmen, live together in one street, which calls to mind the magnificent *Ruas de Ouro* and *de Prata* of Lisbon. The workmanship of these artisans is, indeed, inferior to the European, but is not destitute of taste and solidity. Many trades, which are very necessary in Europe, are at present almost superfluous in the interior of this country, on account of the circumscribed wants of the inhabitants. In the capital, however, and the other towns on the coast, joiners, white-smiths, and other artisans are numerous; but tanners, soap-boilers, and workers in steel are scarce. There is a great demand for mechanics to build sugar and other mills, to construct machines for working the gold mines, &c.; and very high wages are given them. Hitherto, no glass, china, cloth, or hat manufacturers have been established in the capital; and the erection of them would hardly be advisable in a country which can obtain the productions of European industry on such low terms in exchange for the produce of its rich soil." *

To pursue the description of the capital: the streets, which are straight and narrow, are paved with granite, and are now provided with a raised pavement for the foot-passengers; † but they are very sparingly lighted, and hardly more than a few hours in the night, by the lamps placed before the images of the Virgin. The houses, which are generally of two stories, and low and narrow in proportion to their depth, are, for the most part, built of blocks of granite: the upper story, however, is often of wood. The thresholds, door-posts, lintels, and window-frames are of massy quartz, or felt-spar, brought from

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. p. 198.

† This improvement, mentioned by Von Spix, appears to have been introduced since Mr. Luccock visited Rio.

Bahia in a state ready for use.* The roofs are universally covered with semitubular tiles. The lower story is commonly occupied by the shop and warehouse; the second, (and third, if there be one,) by the family apartments, to which there are long and narrow passages taken from the ground-floor, and communicating with the street. In the outskirts of the town the streets are unpaved, and the houses are of only one floor, low, small, and dirty, with the doors and windows of lattice-work, opening outward to the annoyance of passengers. The rents of houses are nearly as high as they are in London.

Churches and convents are almost the only public buildings in Rio, that deserve notice. Among the former, those of Da Candelaria, S. Francisco, and Sta. Paula, are in the best style of architecture; but that of Nossa Senhora da Gloria is the most striking from its situation.

"The cathedral,"† says Mr. Luccock, "in point of rank the first religious edifice in Rio, is situated on a lofty and pleasant hill, south of the town. It occupies a spot celebrated in the history of Brazil, and is very properly dedicated to St. Sebastian. The church, which seems to have been erected at two different periods, is a low, plain, substantial building, of an oblong form, with two small turrets, but without windows. The entrance is from the east, and fronts the altar. Within, the walls are whitewashed, unornamented, and dirty. The altar also is as plain as the church; and the whole evinces that it has profited little by any predilection of the great or the wealthy.

* Granite is found in the immediate neighbourhood, and Dr. Von Spix says, "They continue to blow up rocks of granite with gunpowder, partly to make the city more level and connected, and partly to adorn it with new buildings."

† Rio is an episcopal see. The bishopric was founded in 1676. In the year 1805, it was endowed anew, and provided with a numerous chapter.

The orchestra is at the east end, and is awkwardly crowded towards the ceiling. Around are traces of considerable foundations, much overgrown with brushwood." None of the churches have either any fine paintings or works of sculpture, but only rich gilding. The religious establishments comprise three monasteries, Benedictine, Franciscan, and Carmelite; a Franciscan nunnery; a nunnery of Theresans; an *hospice* of the almoners of the Holy Land; a *misericordia*, with its hospital; a foundling hospital, founded in 1738; (which, within sixty years from that period, received nearly 5000 infants;) and a *recolhimento* for female orphans born in wedlock and of white parents, where they remain till they are portioned off in marriage from the funds of this munificent institution; together with some smaller monastic and charitable institutions.

The royal palace skirts the beach, and is seen to great advantage from the principal landing-place, which is within sixty yards of the doors. It is small, ill-constructed, and inconvenient. The palace of the bishop, which stands on a high hill north of the city, is superior to that of the royal family. The custom-house is a miserable building. The inns are abominably bad. The new mint, the naval and the military arsenals, are called magnificent buildings, but they present a very poor appearance to the eyes of a European.

Though, in proportion to the size and the wants of the city, Rio has but a scanty supply of water, there are several public fountains, and new ones are continually being erected. The aqueduct by which those fountains are supplied, is a noble work, and is described by Dr. Von Spix as the finest piece of architecture of which the city can at present boast. It was completed in the year 1740, and is an imitation of the one at Lisbon, erected by John V. "It consists," Mr. Luccock says, "of two walls, about six feet high, arched over, with sufficient space for

workmen to enter it occasionally, and pass through its whole length. At suitable intervals there are openings for the admission of light and air. Within is laid the canal, about eighteen inches wide, twenty-four deep, and three miles long. It commences at the bottom of the lofty conical peak of the Corcovado, where the waters flowing from that mountain, are collected into a covered reservoir, and thence conveyed into the canal. Their course from the summit is through deep and shady woods, and the canal is defended from the sunbeams; and thus, until they reach the city, little of their freshness is lost." Many persons earn their subsistence by carrying the water to those who live at a distance from the fountains; but, says Dr. Von Spix, "the distribution of it by uncleanly negroes, who offer it for sale in open vessels or in skins, which are often exposed for hours together to the heat of the sun, requires to be altered by the Board of Health: indeed, the government would do a great service to the inhabitants by causing the water to be conveyed into many private houses." The largest of the public fountains is in the square fronting the palace, and close to the harbour: this supplies the ships, and is constantly surrounded by crowds of sailors of all nations.* It was in contemplation to lead a new aqueduct to the south-west of the city.

The education of youth is provided for by many licensed academies; but persons of fortune have their children prepared by private tutors for the university of Coimbra; which, from the scarcity of good teachers, is very expensive. In the *Seminario de S. Joaquim*, the elements of Latin and church singing are taught. But the best academy is stated (by Dr. Von Spix) to be the Lyceum, or *Seminario*

* Captain Cook expressed doubts of the goodness of this water for long voyages; but Dr. Von Spix states, that the experiment has been made of taking it to India, and bringing it back, and it has been found to be uncorrupted by the voyage.

de S. Joze, where, besides Greek, Latin, French, and English, rhetoric, geography, and mathematics,—philosophy is taught, and divinity. Most of the teachers are ecclesiastics, who have now, however, much less influence on the education of the people than formerly. A very useful establishment, of later standing, is the school of surgery (*Aula de Cirurgia*). The course of study in this institution is as follows: first year, anatomy, chemistry, and pharmacy; second year, the same, with the addition of physiology; third year, pathology and therapeutics; fourth year, surgery and midwifery; and in the fifth year, the students attend the neighbouring military hospital. The professors are practising physicians in the city. Natural history, including botany, is also taught the pupils by a learned Carmelite from Pernambuco, Fra Leandro do Sacramento. There is a mineralogical cabinet, and "a most insignificant beginning of a zoological cabinet, consisting of a few stuffed birds and some cases of butterflies." The military academy (*Academia Militar Real*), founded in 1810, though provided with good masters, and especially favoured by the king, has hardly any scholars; but in the newly established *Aula do Commercio*, the lectures on commerce, as well as those on chemistry, are numerously attended. There is a botanical garden in the vicinity of Rio, which will be noticed hereafter.

"Immediately after the arrival of the king," Dr. Von Spix states, "it was intended to give a university to the new monarchy. It was, however, yet undecided, whether the seat of it should be at Rio de Janeiro, or at S. Paulo, which is situated in a more temperate climate. Mr. J. Garcia Stockler, son of a German consul of the Hanse Towns at Lisbon, a man of considerable literary acquirements, and a worthy member of the Lisbon academy, proposed a plan, conceived partly in the spirit of the German

high schools, which, indeed, was much approved by the ministry, but met with so much opposition from those who wished Brazil to continue dependent on Portugal as a colony, that the whole plan was given up." The Brazilians who wish to give their sons a university education, have no alternative, therefore, but to send them across the seas to Coimbra. This might once have been attended with advantage, as affording the young students an opportunity of becoming acquainted with the great institutions of Europe; but now, the necessity of establishing a university in Brazil, without which it must still be considered as half a colony, is becoming every day more urgent. Of course, the professors must, in the first instance, be furnished by Europe. Dr. Von Spix thinks, that nothing but such an institution can rouse the slumbering energies of the country.

Hitherto the government, in their enlightened solicitude to promote education, and to encourage the humanising arts in Rio, have been much in advance of the general intellectual condition of the population. Another new institution, the Academy of Arts, owes its foundation chiefly to the late minister, Araujo, Conde da Barca, who received almost the whole of his education in foreign countries. "While Europe saw, in the foundation of such an institution, an apparently irrefragable proof of the rapid progress of the new state, it is evident," remarks Dr. Von Spix, "upon closer examination, that it is at present by no means adapted to the wants of the people, and therefore cannot yet exert any extensive influence. Several French artists, historical and landscape painters, sculptors, engravers, and architects, and at their head Lebreton, formerly secretary to the Academy of Arts at Paris," (who, however, died at his country-house, near Rio, soon after the arrival of Dr. Von Spix,) "were invited from France, in order, by their instructions and works, to awaken and

to animate the disposition of the Brazilians for the arts, upon which Araujo had confidently calculated. But it could not fail to become evident, that the fine arts cannot take root here, till the mechanical arts, which satisfy the first wants, have prepared a way for their reception; and that it is not till commerce, the activity of which is directed to external objects, is finally established, that endeavours after the enjoyments and refinements of the arts can arise in a nation. There is scarcely any taste here for painting or sculpture; and hence we see even in the churches, instead of real works of art, only ornaments overloaded with gold."

Music, however, is cultivated in Rio with considerable enthusiasm and success. "The Brazilian," says this traveller, "like the Portuguese, has a refined ear for agreeable modulation." The guitar here, as in the south of Europe, is the favourite instrument, and the national songs which are sung with this simple accompaniment, are partly of Portuguese origin, partly native productions. The emperor has a private band of vocal and instrumental performers, composed of native mulattoes and negroes, which Dr. Von Spix pronounces highly creditable to the musical talent of the Brazilians. Don Pedro is in the habit of occasionally leading this band himself. "Haydn's favourite pupil," the Chevalier Neukomm, was, in 1817, composer to the royal chapel; but the musical knowledge of the inhabitants was not yet ripe for his masses, which are in the style of the most celebrated German composers. "At present, the first thing required of a mass is, that it shall proceed in cheerful melodies, and that a long and pompous *gloria* shall be succeeded by a short *credo*."

It is an unfortunate circumstance, as regards both the literary character and the moral taste of the Brazilians, that, in Rio at least, so decided a preference is shewn by the higher classes for the French language and French

literature. "Besides the publications of the day with which the French *Magasins des Modes* supply Brazil, the works of Voltaire and Rousseau are read with so much avidity, that several patriotic writers have found reason to declaim against the Gallomania. "This circumstance," adds Dr. Von Spix, "is the more remarkable, because political and mercantile interests unite the Portuguese with the English, and we might therefore naturally expect a greater inclination to the literature of England." But the difference of religion, and the prejudice against heretical literature, are, probably, the reason that English writers are not preferred, and that even translations from the English into the Portuguese, are not by any means so numerous as those from the French. All the influence of the ecclesiastics would be in favour of France, rather than of England. The general knowledge of French has not, however, banished the mother tongue in the higher classes. With the exception of the court, and those immediately belonging to it, the French and English languages are spoken only by the men, and are therefore seldom used in company. In 1817, there were only two indifferent booksellers' shops at Rio, and only two newspapers were published in the whole kingdom; the *Gazeta* of Rio, and at Bahia, the *Idade de Ouro do Brazil.* Even these were not then read with general interest. On the other hand, the Lisbon newspapers were circulated by the Portuguese emigrants, and the London journals by the English. Since the declaration of the Brazilian independence, the number of journals has, however, greatly increased.

AMUSEMENTS.

THE amusements of the inhabitants of the metropolis are very limited. The theatre, which generally holds the highest rank among places of amusement, is thus described

by Mr. Luccock. "It is situated close to the palace, and is a poor, small, dark house. Its form on the inside is an oval, at one end of which is the stage, and at the other the royal box, which occupies the whole northern side of the building. Other boxes, cut off from all communication with the air, and hot almost beyond endurance, extend round the sides of the house, and have an open clumsy railing in front, most gaudily painted. The pit is divided into two parts: that before the royal box has forms, with a rail, against which the shoulders may be leaned; the division behind this, and beneath the seat of royalty, is separated by a barrier, and the part of the audience stationed there must stand and listen. The house is lighted from tin sconces, fixed to the pillars which support the boxes, and a chandelier of wood with tin branches. With this elegant furniture, the scenery and other decorations thoroughly correspond. Sentinels with fixed bayonets are placed in every part of the house, and in all the avenues leading to it." *

"One of the last scenes," adds Mr. Luccock, "which I witnessed during my first stay at Rio (in 1808), was the catastrophe of a tragedy. The heroine, dressed in white muslin, was supposed to be put to death while the curtain was down, by severing her head from the body. Here, I think, would have been an end of her part, on any other than a Brazilian stage; but, after a little time, the curtain was drawn up again, for no other purpose than to shew the audience the headless body of the lady, seated upright in an arm-chair, with the blood bubbling from her neck, and flowing down her raiment."

* Rio is described by this traveller as properly a garrison town, being divided into military districts, and soldiers on duty were always walking about the streets, some in regimentals and others without them, acting in the civil, as well as the military department.

Mrs. Graham, who visited Rio in 1821, was present at the performance of an after-piece, which was in a somewhat less barbarous taste. It was called "The Discovery of Brazil." Cabral and his officers were represented as just landed: they had discovered the natives of the country; and, according to the custom of the Portuguese discoverers, they had set up their white flag, with the red holy cross upon it, whence they had first named the land. At the foot of this emblem, they kneeled in worship, and endeavoured to induce the Brazilians to join them in their sacred rites. These, on their part, tried to persuade Cabral to reverence the heavenly bodies, and dissension seemed about to trouble the union of the new friends, when, by a clumsy enough machine, a little genius came down from above, and leaping from its car, displayed the new imperial standard, inscribed *Independencia o Morte!* This was totally unexpected in the house, which for an instant seemed electrified into silence; and then commenced a loud clapping of hands, which continued for some time!

Bull-baiting, the grand national pastime of the Spaniards and Portuguese, appears happily not to be much in vogue in Rio. There is a building erected for the purpose, but it is little used. The reason assigned is, that the Brazilian bull does not possess the fire of the Portuguese. Not long ago, the inhabitants of Rio were astonished and delighted with a far more innocent and not less rational exhibition,—some feats of horsemanship and tight-rope dancing by an English performer.

A Roman Catholic country, however, cannot fail to present other public diversions in the shape of religious festivals, processions, and spectacles. The royal emigration was followed by a prodigious revival and multiplication of ceremonies and performances of this description, "in which," says Mr. Luccock, "a mixture of religion and pleasure takes place, not unlike our village

wakes at their earlier periods." Dr. Von Spix was present at a festival celebrated by the negroes in honour of their patroness, *Nossa Senhora do Rosario*. "A chapel on a slip of land running into the Bay, not far from the royal country-seat of S. Cristovâo, was filled towards the evening with a countless multitude of brown and black people; and the band of negroes from S. Cristovâo, struck up a lively and almost merry strain, which was succeeded by a very pathetic sermon. Sky-rockets, crackers, serpents, and the like,* were let off in front of the church, and near the calm surface of the sea, to add to the splendour of the solemnity."

Near the sea is the public promenade, a small garden surrounded with walls, and protected against the sea by a perpendicular quay of hewn stone. Its shady avenues of mango, jaca (the East-India bread-fruit tree), yto, and rose apple-tree, between which are planted the beautiful bushes of the *poinciana*, are described by Dr. Von Spix as very inviting in the evening, when the heat is allayed by the sea-breeze.† In the vicinity of this promenade, the provision-markets afford an interesting sight to the newly-arrived European, whose attention will be attracted by the screams of the parrots exposed for sale, the cries of other animals peculiar to the country, and of birds of the gayest plumage from various parts of the world.

* Fire-works form an important part of the religious festivals of the Brazilians; and the crackling of rockets may be heard almost daily, from an early hour in the morning, commingling with the frequent salutes from the guns of the forts, and those of vessels arriving from all quarters, the various dissonant sounds of traffic, and the "busy hum" of men of all climes and languages.

† The botanical names of these productions, as given by Von Spix, are, *Mangifera Indica, Artocarpus integrifolia, Guarea trichilioides, Eugenia Jambos,* and *Cæsalpina pulcherrima*.

COSTUME, &c.

Of the costume, habits, and manners of the inhabitants, a most minute account has been furnished by Mr. Luccock, which we give in his own words. It is possible that some changes may have taken place, in consequence of the extraordinary stimulus given to every kind of improvement by recent political events; but it forms, no doubt, a correct representation of the state of society in Rio, previously to its separation from the mother country.

"Of their dress and appearance," says this intelligent traveller, "we strangers were more competent judges than of their minds. The former is of the lightest sort. Among their familiar friends they are seen with a shift only, bound about the waist with the strings of a petticoat, and the bosom of it often falling off from one shoulder. They wear no stockings, and seldom either slippers, or the wooden clogs, with brown upper leathers, called *tamancas*. Their hair is long and too commonly uncombed, bound with a riband close behind the head, the ends turned up to the crown, and there twisted about a sort of bodkin. Sometimes a wreath of artificial flowers is added, ingeniously made by themselves of silk, beads, coloured papers, tinsel, and the wings of some of the brilliant insects of the country; these are arranged and worn with taste. Their manners are a contrast to every thing graceful,—coarse, boisterous, and pert; they talk fluently, but commonly in loud and harsh tones; their general air is sly and coquettish; and they have no idea that their carriage can possibly excite disgust, or even that they can fail to be objects of admiration: they have few opportunities of conversing with the other sex, and what good fortune offers, they use with eagerness.

"Such manners may be attractive to their countrymen,

but their influence can extend no further. The ornaments of these females have a pleasing effect, and set off the charms of a face, the features of which are round and regular, of a black, lively, inquisitive eye, a smooth and open forehead, a mouth expressive of simplicity and good temper, furnished with a white and even set of teeth; united with a moderately handsome figure, a sprightly, laughing air, and a demeanour gay, frank, and unsuspicious. Such is the common appearance of a young lady about thirteen or fourteen years of age; a period when she usually takes upon her the cares of a household, or rather, notwithstanding obvious disqualifications, assumes the character of a matron. Indeed, at eighteen, in a Brazilian woman, nature has attained to full maturity: a few years later, she becomes corpulent, and even unwieldy, acquires a great stoop in her shoulders, and walks with an awkward, waddling gait; she begins to decay, loses the good humour of her countenance, and assumes, in its place, a contracted and scowling brow; the eye and mouth both indicate that they have been accustomed to express the violent and vindictive passions, the cheeks are deprived of their plumpness and colour, and at twenty-five, or thirty at most, she becomes a perfectly wrinkled old woman.

"Early corpulence appeared to me to arise from their secluded and indolent habits. They were seldom seen out of doors, except when going to mass, so early as four o'clock in the morning, on *dias santos*, or days of sacred obligation; and even then, the whole form and face were so wrapped up in mantles, or enclosed within the curtains of a *cadeira*, as to preclude the enjoyment of fresh air, and to conceal every feature, except perhaps a wickedly talkative eye. These cadeiras answer, less commodiously, the same purpose as do the palanquins of the East. They consist of an arm-chair with a high back, to which is

attached a long foot-board, and a canopy. Around the latter are suspended curtains of blue cloth, edged with some gaudy colour, and kept closed, as the machine passes along the streets, in order to conceal the haughty, or the constrained donna from public view. The whole is attached to a long pole, passing over the lady's head, and is suspended between two black men, who support it on their shoulders. Such were the only carriages used formerly in Rio by people of fashion; and like the modern chaise, to which they have lately given place, they were sometimes very splendid, being decorated in such a manner as might best display the taste, the wealth, and the rank of the owner. On the foot-board, which is large enough for the purpose, is often seated a little *senhora*, forming the same idle habits as her mother has done, and laying a foundation for future unwieldiness of a similar kind.

"The exercise which these ladies take, is almost wholly confined to the house. Little exertion is necessary, and that little is opposed by inclination: they are surrounded by slaves, and it is their privilege to be waited upon. I have seen this carried to an extent which would be ridiculous, were it not something worse; and am sorry to add, that such sights are not unusual. A lady was seated on a mat, (one morning when I called upon her,) surrounded by a number of slaves, with needle-work in their hands; a drinking-vessel full of water being placed so as that she could conveniently reach it. She interrupted the conversation by suddenly calling aloud for another slave to come from a different part of the house. When the negress entered the room, the lady said to her, 'Give me that drinking-vessel.' She did so; her mistress drank, and returned it; the slave replaced it in its former situation, and retired without seeming to feel that the command was an extraordinary one, or that she had

performed aught which she had not done a thousand times before. Ah! ladies, thought I, what wonder that you become corpulent, and ruin your constitution: these are the natural effects of inanity.

"Other causes of the change which has been noticed, might be found, I have often thought, in an obstinate adherence to unsuitable customs. The shrunk and furrowed appearance of the brow seems to me to arise, in a great measure, from following European fashions under the burning sun of the torrid zone, 'where the full tide of day is poured.' Even the white and genteel families of Brazil wear no covering on the head, no shade for the eye; hence, the brow and pupil contract themselves as much as possible, to shield the tender organ from the superabundance of light. The walls of the houses too, both within and without, are universally whitened, heightening, by reflection, the midday glare, and sometimes producing an almost intolerable uneasiness in the eyes of persons possessed of the strongest sight. Is it wonderful that the forehead and eyes of delicate females should gradually assume an habitual contraction, which overclouds many a fair face with appearances that sometimes misrepresent the real turn of the mind? Premature age is owing partly to climate, partly to a constitution enfeebled and ruined by inactivity; most of all, to the unnatural and shamefully early age at which females are allowed to marry. Their early good-humour, or the show of it, soon wears away; they often become the very reverse of what they were, and exhibit the alteration too plainly. This change may be attributed principally to the childish ceremony, and more foolish flattery, with which every woman is treated, who ranks above the condition of a slave. They seem to be regarded by the men as dolls, or as spoiled children, whose whims must be gratified and even anticipated; and she who has the

greatest number, obtains the most attention. The generality of ladies treated in this way, become, almost of course, fretful and peevish, and pour their spleen upon their slaves; and when these resist or neglect the orders given them, endeavour to subdue them, by a noisy and boisterous behaviour, not always free from malignity, and by castigation, not the less severe for coming from a lady's hand. Here is exercise, and perhaps the most efficacious that they ever take, quickening the circulation, giving some tone to the muscles, and discharging peccant humours, but, at the same time, destroying the temper, implanting in the heart the principles of a vixen, and stamping on the countenance the plain indications of what passes within.*

"When a gentleman calls upon another, if he be not intimate at the house, he goes thither in full dress, with a cocked hat, with buckles in his shoes and at the knees, and with a sword or dirk by his side. Having reached the bottom of the stairs, he claps his hands as a signal to attract attention, and utters a sort of sibilant sound between his teeth and the end of his tongue, as though he pronounced the syllables *chee eu*. The servant who attends the call, roughly inquires in a nasal tone, Who is it? and being told, retires to inform the master of the house, what are the wishes of the visitor. If he be a friend, or one so well known as to be received without ceremony, the master quickly comes to him, and ushers

* "I have seen," says a recent French traveller, "yes, I have myself seen, two young ladies (of Rio) whose countenances wore the expression of mildness and benevolence, endeavour by way of pastime, to cut, at a certain distance, with a whip, the face of a negro whom they had ordered not to stir from the spot. This exercise seemed to amuse them. I would mention their names, if their father, who came in after the first essay, had not severely reprimanded them for their cruelty."—*Arago's Narrative of a Voyage round the World.* 4to. 1823.

him into the *sala*, making loud protestations of the pleasure given him by the visit, mixing his complimentary speeches with a great number of bows. Before business is entered upon, if that be the object, repeated apologies are offered for the free mode in which the visitor is received. And, indeed, there is often no little occasion for such apologies; for the gentleman very generally makes his appearance with a beard of many days' growth, with his black hair in the roughest state, though besmeared with grease, and with no clothing over his cotton shirt. This garment is, indeed, well made, and ornamented with needle-work, especially about the bosom. But then it is commonly worn in the house so as to expose the breast, and the sleeves are tucked up to the elbows. Or if, by chance, it be secured at the neck and wrists by its globular gold buttons, the flaps appear on the outside, hanging half way down the sides, over a waistband which secures round the loins a short pair of trowsers; while the legs are quite bare, and the feet covered with *tamancas*. All this is not very delicate, more especially as the skins of the Brazilians abound with hair, and are much sunburnt about the breast and legs.

"Should the call be a ceremonious one, a servant is sent to conduct the visitor to the *sala*, from which, as he enters, he often sees the persons who were in the room, escaping at the other door. Here he waits alone, it may be half an hour, when the gentleman appears in a sort of half-dress. They both bow profoundly at a distance: after a sufficiency of skill in this science has been displayed, and thus time gained to ascertain each other's rank and pretensions, they approach, if unequal, with corresponding dignity and respect—if supposed to be nearly equals, with familiarity. The business is then entered upon, and despatched at once. These bows between strangers, and this slow approach, I almost like, as they give men

some opportunity to measure and appreciate one another, and prevent a thousand awkward blunders and equally awkward apologies. With my countrymen in general, I participate in an abhorrence of the Brazilian embrace." *

A ridiculous custom prevails (or did prevail) in Rio, of obliging all persons to dismount from a carriage or horse, when any of the royal family are passing along the streets. On such occasions, an extraordinary and whimsical bustle takes place the moment the approach is heralded by the cadets (attendants somewhat superior to a common soldier): some are flying for fear of being ridden over; others are drawing up their carriages or mules into a corner; and he is lucky who escapes unhurt: all are bare-headed. Such a ceremony could not but be very repugnant to the feelings of Englishmen, Americans, and other foreigners; but they have generally complied with it. But a few years since, during the residence of the court of Lisbon at Rio, the queen of Portugal, who had the character of being extremely particular and peremptory on this point, was taking her usual ride to a small cottage and garden at the bottom of the Orange Valley, when she met Lord Strangford, who refused to comply with the accustomed ceremony. The cadets instantly insulted his lordship, by using their swords in compelling him to dismount. The only redress which his lordship obtained, was the imprisonment of the guards for a short time. Some time after, Mr. Sumpter, then the American minister to the court, met the queen in the same neighbourhood. The guard rode up to him, saying, "*Apea-se-Senr.*" He replied, that he was the American minister, and that he would not dismount; on which they did not hesitate

* Notes on Rio Janeiro, &c. pp. 111—121.

to compel him. Mr. Sumpter then said that he would not require any satisfaction for this gross insult, but that he should provide himself with holsters and pistols, and would shoot the first person who offered him a similar insult. Very shortly afterwards, he met the queen's guard again, who rode up to him, making the same peremptory demand as before. In answer to which, he frankly told them, that the first man who offered him any violence, he would shoot dead upon the spot. This resolute conduct induced them to retire. Upon this, the queen ordered them to proceed a second time to dismount Mr. Sumpter; but they were intimidated by his continued firmness. It is generally believed that her majesty, highly incensed at this spirited conduct, requested the minister of state to issue an order for Mr. Sumpter's imprisonment in the *Ilha das Cobras*. The minister, however, prevailed upon her majesty to wait the result of a despatch to the king upon the subject, who was then fifty miles off, at St. Cruz. The consequence was, that orders were immediately issued, that no foreigner should be compelled to pay more courtesy than his own sovereign would require from him. Since that time, however, an English merchant, who was driving his lady in a chaise, was beat by the queen's guards till his arm became quite black, and his life endangered, notwithstanding he had stopped his horse, stood up in the chaise, and took off his hat. In the month of July, 1819, Commodore Bowles was taking a ride near the Orange Valley, when the queen's cadets beat him off his horse with their swords. The cadets were sent on board the Creole to apologize for their conduct, and the commodore advised them in future to draw their swords only against an enemy. To the king, who did not require this ridiculous and inconvenient homage,

the English generally were desirous of shewing their respect by dismounting.*

The indolence with which all classes of the inhabitants of Rio are reproached, is, undoubtedly, to be ascribed in some measure to the relaxing climate. The merchants, Mr. Luccock says, seldom employ themselves for more than three hours in the day. The shopkeepers are equally idle. All shop-doors are closed, or nearly so, at noon. A cloth is then spread on the counter, in the close, damp room which serves as shop, parlour, and bed-room, if not "kitchen and all;" and the only regular meal in the day is then hastily taken. The middle classes of the citizens of Rio, who have not entirely adopted the manners of Portugal, take a small proportion of animal food, contenting themselves with the admirable fruits, and the cheese imported from Minas Geraes, which, with banians, is met with on every table. The Brazilian eats even wheaten bread but sparingly, preferring to it his *farinha*. He eats but moderately of his few dishes, drinks chiefly water, and takes every thing with the greatest regularity. In the evening, he very prudently takes scarcely any thing; at the most, a cup of tea, or of coffee; and he avoids, especially at night, eating cool fruits. "Only such a regimen," says Dr. Von Spix, "and conforming to the nature of the climate, preserves him from many diseases to which the stranger exposes himself through inattention or ignorance." Fish is not so much eaten here as on the northern coasts. Mandioc and maize flour, and black beans, boiled with bacon and salt beef dried in the sun, are the chief articles of diet among the lower classes.

Rio Janeiro has the reputation of being one of the more unhealthy cities of Brazil—Dr. Von Spix and Mr.

* Henderson's *Historical Account of Brazil.*

Luccock think, without reason. The climate is hot and moist: high and thickly-wooded mountains, the narrow entrance of the bay, and the numerous islands, impede the free passage of the wind; but there are none of those very rapid changes of temperature which are so particularly injurious to the health. Moist, cold winds, producing slight rheumatism and catarrh, are, however, not uncommon. The diseases most frequent are, chronical diarrhœas, dropsy, intermitting fevers, syphilis, and hydrocele; but the last of these only is considered by Dr. Von Spix as endemic, and it chiefly attacks the newly arrived Europeans and North Americans. The Brazilian doctors attribute it chiefly to the water, but, this author thinks, erroneously. Though Rio has no endemic intermittent fever, diseases readily assume this character, and fever soon follows on the slightest disorder. Among the causes which have been thought to render Rio unhealthy, are, its low situation, which is scarcely above the level of the sea, and the filthiness of its streets,* while the waters that descend from the mountains behind it, encompass it with stagnant marshes. The marshy flats on the sea-side diffuse, during the time of the ebb, † an intolerable

* The cleaning of the streets is at present confided to the carrion vultures, who are protected on that account.

† "The internal basin of the bay has its tides, as well as the ocean. At new and full moon, high water, which rises fourteen or fifteen feet, sets in at thirty minutes past four. The ebb sometimes continues a whole day without intermission, at which time the current is the strongest on the west side of the bay: when the flood begins, a whirling current is remarked on the east side. The sea, when it is high, particularly at the equinoxes, fills up the sandy hollows and lagoons in several places round the city, which are planted with rhizophora, conocarpas, and avicenia trees. The sandy plain between the suburb of St. Anna, the bay of Sacco d'Alferes, and the principal street towards St. Christopher, is sometimes changed into a lake."—*Von Spix's Travels*, vol. i. p. 141.

The strong flood has more than once led the captains of ships to

stench; but, fortunately for the inhabitants, they do not remain uncovered by the water long enough to produce endemic fevers by their putrid exhalations. The mode of interment is another evil. The people have a superstitious dislike to burying their dead under the canopy of heaven, and therefore crowd their corpses into the churches, the atmosphere of which becomes by this means contaminated. Slavery, also, brings with it here its train of physical as well as moral evils: the slaves, who are commonly landed from Africa in a sickly state, frequently spread disease. The prisons, too, are in a loathsome and disgraceful condition. Much remains to be done for the improvement of Rio in these respects, by the future efforts of the government. The stranger should be advised neither to expose himself to the fatal effects of the sun's rays, by walking in the open air during the hottest parts of the day, when all the streets are deserted, nor to the dangerous consequences of taking cold in the first night-dews, when, after sunset, the atmosphere is suddenly cooled; and, above all, to guard against every species of excess or sensual indulgence.*

It is at present impossible to obtain an accurate estimate of the population of Rio. Before the arrival of the king, it is thought by some not to have exceeded 50,000 souls; the number of blacks and people of colour considerably exceeding that of the whites. This proportion is now com-

anchor too close in-shore, so that, when the ebb has set in, they have been in shallow water. An English ship from Liverpool was wrecked in this manner, in 1817, close to the Ilha das Cobras, being dashed to pieces on the rocks in a few hours.

* Dr. Von Spix endeavoured, but without success, to procure lists of the deaths and burials, which would have thrown some light on the alleged unhealthiness of the place, by shewing the degree of mortality. But in what colonial capital would not the average number of deaths form a presumption against the healthiness of the site?

pletely reversed. "It may be considered as certain," says Dr. Von Spix, "that, since the year 1808, 24,000 Portuguese have gradually arrived here from Europe." To these must be added, a considerable number of English, French, Dutch, Germans, and Italians, who, after the opening of the ports, settled here, some as merchants, others as mechanics. A number of English ship-builders and mechanics, Swedish iron-workers, German engineers, and French artists and manufacturers, were invited over by the Government. Mr. Mawe rated the whole population, including the negroes, at 100,000. Dr. Von Spix states that, in the year 1817, the city and its dependencies contained above 110,000 inhabitants. Mr. Henderson, in his recent work on Brazil, states the number at 150,000, about two thirds of whom, he thinks, are negroes, mulattoes, and other people of colour. Rio is still infamous as a mart for negro slaves. The trade, however, has been restricted by a decree of the emperor (when prince regent) to the kingdom of Angola, and he has declared his intention to abolish it altogether as soon as practicable. As soon as a slave-ship has unladen its living cargo, the negroes are quartered in houses hired for the purpose in Vallongo street, near the sea. There may be seen children from six years of age upwards, and adults of both sexes, of all ages, lying about half naked, exposed to the sun in the court-yard, or out of the houses; others are distributed in several rooms, the two sexes being kept separate. A mulatto or old negro who has acquired experience in long service, has the superintendence of the food and other necessaries for the new comers. They pass the night on straw mats, with blankets to cover them. A great number of these slaves belong to the sovereign, and are brought as tribute from the African colonies. "Whoever wants to buy slaves, repairs to the Vallongo, to make his choice, where every inspector

draws up the slaves quite naked, for his examination. The purchaser endeavours to convince himself of the bodily strength and health of the negroes, partly by feeling their bodies, and partly by causing them to execute rapid motions, particularly striking out the arm with the fist doubled. What is most apprehended in these purchases, are, hidden corporal defects, and especially the very frequent disposition to blindness. When the choice is made, the purchase money is fixed, which for a healthy male negro is here from 350 to 500 florins; the seller generally making himself answerable for any corporal defects that may be discovered within a fortnight. The purchaser then takes away his slave, whom he destines, according as he wants him, to be a mechanic, a mule-driver, or a servant. The new proprietor is now absolute master of the labour of his slave and the produce of it. But if he is guilty of inhuman treatment of him, he is liable, as for other civil offences, to be punished by the police or the tribunals. The latter take care, by means expressly adopted for the purpose, to restore run-away slaves to their right owners, and punish the fugitives if they renew the attempt, by putting an iron ring round their necks. If the master will not punish his slaves himself, it is done, after payment of a certain sum, by the police in the Calabongo. Here, however, as well as in Brazil in general, the negroes easily become habituated to the country. This is a consequence of their careless tempers, as well as of the similarity of the climate to that of their native country, and the mildness with which they are treated in Brazil." *

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. pp. 178, 9. In the year 1817, no fewer than 20,075 negroes are said to have been imported into Rio, under the Portuguese flag, from the ports of Guinea and Mozambique.

COMMERCE OF RIO.

Rio is the great emporium of Brazilian commerce, especially of all the mining districts. All the small ports on the coast, northwards as far as Bahia, and southwards to Monte Video, send hither their produce for exportation to Europe, or home consumption. The quantity of provisions, in particular, annually imported from all these places, is considerable: they consist of farinha, beans, bacon, and dried or salt meat. The produce of their cattle, hides, horns, dried meat, tallow, and bacon, with rice and wheat flour, come by sea, chiefly from the provinces of Rio Grande do Sul, and S. Paulo. The latter furnishes also cheese, the bark of the mangrove-tree for tanning, with some gum, cotton, sugar, and rum. St. Catherine sends sole leather, onions, garlic, dried fish, and pottery. The small harbours to the north of Rio, such as S. Joâo do Paraiba, S. Salvador, Macahe, Porto Seguro, Caravelhas, Victoria, &c. supply Rio with a considerable quantity of vegetables, and fish, with the produce of their fine forests, in the shape of beams, planks, hoops, Brazil-wood, bark, charcoal, fuel, and cocoa-nuts; also tobacco, sugar, rum, and rice. Cape Frio sends tubs and casks made of the trunk of the gamelleira (fig-tree). Ilha Grande furnishes extremely good pottery, and, as well as Cape Frio, lime. Bahia sends *slaves*, tobacco, millstones, *tucum* (thread made of the fibres of the palm), and cocoa-nuts; Pernambuco, salt, saltpetre, and European articles; Buenos Ayres and Monte Video, hides, horns, leather, &c. and wheat flour. "This coasting trade is principally carried on in small one or two-masted ships, and keeps up a constant intercourse between the whole Brazilian coast and the capital. From the mouth of the Plata to Rio, the voyage is generally completed in from twenty-two to thirty days; from St. Catherine and Rio Grande do Sul, in from fifteen to six

and twenty days; from Porto Seguro in from eight to fifteen; from Bahia in from twelve to twenty; according as the wind blows along the coast from south to north, which depends on the position of the sun." * It is obvious, how important a bearing this extended coasting-trade has on the rising greatness of Brazil as a maritime power. Para and Maranham, however, export all their productions direct to Europe, which is the case, in part, with Bahia, and of course Buenos Ayres.

The inland trade between Rio and the neighbouring provinces, especially with S. Paulo and Minas, to which there are tolerable roads, is very extensive. The latter sends its cotton, coffee, and tobacco chiefly to Rio, though further from some parts than Bahia, the road being less difficult: † it exports also, besides its precious stones, cheese, marmalade, brown sugar-loaves, and an enormous quantity of very coarse cottons for clothing the slaves and poor shepherds of the southern provinces. From Rio Grande do Sul and S. Paulo, many thousands of oxen, horses, and mules are annually driven to Rio. The inhabitants of the remote provinces of Matto Grosso and Goyaz bring gold in bars and dust, precious stones, and smuggled diamonds (the article being contraband), to exchange for European manufactures. ‡

* Von Spix, vol. i. pp. 185-7.

† In 1820, Minas sent, of cotton, 70,407 arrobas; coffee, 20,000; tobacco, 54,281.

‡ "It is nothing uncommon," says Dr. Von Spix, "to see inhabitants of the deserts of Cujaba and Matto Grosso, who have made a journey of 300 miles or more, leading back caravans of mules laden with articles for the consumption of the interior. The Brazilian is not to be deterred by the dangers and fatigues of a journey which often separates him eight or ten months from his family, from undertaking from time to time the management of his commercial affairs in person. A man who undertakes, almost weekly, a journey on horseback of five or six Brazilian miles (about twenty or twenty-four English), to attend mass at church,

To the smaller ports of Brazil, Rio exports all sorts of European goods; to Pernambuco and Seara, sometimes considerable quantities of vegetables; to the northern provinces, great numbers of *slaves*; to the Plata, immense quantities of coarse cloths; to both the western and eastern coasts of Africa, English and Portuguese goods; to Europe, sugar, coffee, cotton, tobacco, hides, tallow, a few otters' skins, horse-hair and hides, horn, rum, treacle, whale-oil and whale-bone, ipecacuanha, rice, cocoa, indigo, fustic-wood, log-wood, and ship timber. To these may be added, among the more precious articles of export, gold in chains and other ornamental forms, diamonds, topazes, amethysts, tourmalines (often sold for emeralds), chrysoberyls, aqua marinas, and wrought jewellery. The cochineal was at one period becoming an important article of commerce; but the trade was ruined by the cupidity of the cultivators, who, finding it obtain a high price, adulterated it: on discovering the fraud, the government and the merchants declined to purchase it, and it consequently ceased to be cultivated. The Brazil-wood is still found in the forests of Pernambuco, but Dr. Von Spix states, that the government, to which it belongs, has not had any felled for many years, and there are now no magazines of it in the place. Both Portuguese and North American Indiamen often take from Rio, instead of goods, large sums in silver. Mr. Luccock states that, in some years, the silver exported in this way has amounted to 500,000*l.*, and even 800,000*l.* sterling.

The sugar-cane was introduced into Rio by the governor-general, Mem da Sa, immediately after the expulsion of the French in 1568. It is cultivated more

or to visit his neighbours, does not fear to travel several hundred miles, if necessary, to exchange the harvest of one or of several years for the valuable productions of foreign countries."

especially in those districts of the capitania, which lie to the south and east of the mountains (Serra do Mar); that is, in the districts of Ilha Grande, Cabo Frio, and Goytacazes, which are the warmest and moistest parts of the country. Most of the sugar plantations and manufactories are in the immediate vicinity of the capital, or about Cape Frio. The coffee of Rio was formerly not liked in Europe, owing to their plucking the berry unripe, and suffering it to corrupt; but Dr. Lesesne, an experienced planter from St. Domingo, has recently introduced a more advantageous manner of treating the plant, which has led to its extensive cultivation, and its quality is said to be equal to that of Martinique and St. Domingo. The cotton-tree thrives very well in Rio de Janeiro, but the higher and drier district of Minas Novas is more favourable to it. Tobacco is grown chiefly in the islands in the bay of Rio and the Angra dos Reys, on the *Beira-mar*, and in Espiritu Santo.

The imports from the mother country consist chiefly of wine, oil, olives, vinegar, hard-ware, coarse linen, hats, silks, distilled liquors, medicines, preserved fruits, pottery from Oporto, Portuguese books, musical instruments, and paper, chiefly from Italy. In former times, East India goods were brought here in large quantities from Lisbon; but, at present, they are imported direct from India. A voyage thither and back is performed with great expedition. One large ship of 800 tons is stated by Mr. Mawe to have sailed, loaded at Surat, and returned, within the space of seven months. A voyage to China seldom occupies a longer period. It is not improbable, therefore, that this port may eventually become an entrepôt for India goods destined for Europe. England (particularly London and Liverpool) and its colonies supply Rio with cotton goods, fine cloths, porcelain and earthenware, iron, lead, copper, tin (raw and wrought), anchors,

cables, gunpowder, porter, cheese, salt butter, distilled liquors, &c. From Gibraltar are received many East-India goods, and, in Portuguese ships, Spanish wines. France (chiefly Brest and Havre de Grace) sends trinkets, furniture, wax candles, drugs, liqueurs, pictures and prints, French books, silks, looking-glasses, hats, glass and china, dried fruits, oil, and butter. Holland sends beer, glass, linen, paper, and Geneva, which is much in request in the tropical countries on account of its diuretic quality. Austria* has sent, on speculation, watches, piano-fortes, muskets, linens, silks, velveteens, flannels, mortars, iron-hoops, fishing-hooks, pen-knives, quicksilver, wax, isinglass, copper, brass, lead, tin, and antimony. The other parts of Germany, which formerly carried on a very extensive trade in Bohemian glass and linen with Spain and Portugal, have now tried the experiment of sending consignments of these goods direct to Brazil; they have carried on a good trade, especially in Nuremberg toys, and in iron and brass utensils. Russia and Sweden send iron, steel, copper utensils, sail-cloth, ropes, cords, and tar. The Swedish iron is preferred to that from England, on account of its greater ductility. North America sends chiefly corn, flour, soap, salt provisions, spermaceti candles, train oil, biscuit, leather, boards, pitch, potash, and rude furniture. As the market for these is fluctuating, the American cargoes are frequently taken ultimately to other ports, and the provisions are commonly sent to the Cape. From Mozambique, besides slaves, Rio imports gold dust, ivory, pepper, colombo root, ebony, cocculus indicus, and an abundance of gums, particularly the gum

* It was intended, Dr. Von Spix says, on occasion of the marriage of the Archduchess Leopoldina with Don Pedro, to establish a commercial intercourse with Austria, in which the two states were reciprocally to favour each other; but the plan was never brought to maturity.

meni. From Angola and Benguela, wax, palm oil, Mundubi oil, ivory, sulphur, and some gum Arabic: the latter two articles and salt are the chief imports from the Cape de Verd Islands. From Macao, the imports consist of fine muslins, printed cottons, silk stuffs, porcelain, tea, Indian ink, cinnamon, pepper, and camphor.

Mr. Luccock has given a table of the commerce of Rio, as compared with that of Bahia, for the year 1816, from which it appears that, in that year, 1460 vessels (of which 113 were British, 114 of other foreign nations, and the remainder Portuguese,) entered the port of Rio, and 519 (of which 57 were British, and 44 foreign of other countries,) that of Bahia. Outwards, the numbers were, 1232 from Rio (93 British), and 431 from Bahia.

A table of the principal exports in 1817, is given by Dr. Von Spix, which shews that, in that year, the sum total of value, in the five chief articles only, amounted to 5,401,597,600 *rees* (about 1,350,400*l.* sterling), and the duty to 149,279,872 *rees*:* they consisted of 17,000 chests of sugar, 300,000 *arrobas*† of coffee, 40,000 bales of cotton, 512,000 ox-hides, and about 30,000 cwt. of tobacco. According to documents cited by M. Beauchamp,

* The coin of Brazil differs from that of Portugal. It is calculated in *rees* (an imaginary coin), and the value of every piece is marked on it. There are copper coins of 10 and 20 *rees;* silver coins of 80 and 160 *rees;* the single and double *patacea* of 320, 640, and 960 rees. The new gold coins are all of 4000 *rees:* there are older ones of 1000, 2000, and 3000 *rees.* 100 rees of Portugal are equal to about 6*d.* English.

† An *arroba* contains 32 Portuguese pounds, about 32½ English. Four *arrobas* make one *quintal* = 129½lb. English. Corn and salt are measured by the *alqueire*, about ⅔ of a bushel English. 20 *alquieres* make 1 *moio.* Liquids are measured by *pipas* and *canadas.* A Brazilian *canada* = 5½ Lisbon *canadas* = 2 English gallons. A *pipa* of port = 60 Brazilian (312 Lisbon) *canadas.* The measures of length are *varas* (5 of which = 6 yards English), and *covados* (27 = 20 yards English).

the imports had risen, in 1821, to 1,294,000 livres sterling, and the exports to 2,278,000 livres.

Rio is in lat. 22° 54′ S. and long. 43° 18′ W.

ENVIRONS OF RIO.

THE vicinity of Rio presents some very fine scenery, in particular around the *Lagoa do Frietas*, where many of the inhabitants of the city have their country-houses. Near its northern end, the traveller passes under the precipitous peak of the Corcovado along a romantic valley. On the declivity of the chain of hills which stretches from the city towards the south-west, the Prussian consul-general, M. Von Langsdorff,* had a small country-house, at the time of Dr. Von Spix's visit, commanding an enchanting prospect over the city and part of the bay. "Nothing," says this traveller, "can be compared to the beauty of this retreat, when the most sultry hours of the day are past, and gentle breezes, impregnated with balsamic perfumes from the neighbouring wooded mountains, cool the air. This enjoyment continues to increase as the night spreads over the land and the sea, which shines at a distance, and the city, where the noise of business has subsided, is gradually lighted. He who has not personally experienced the enchantment of tranquil moonlight nights in these happy latitudes, can never be inspired, even by the most faithful description, with those feelings which scenes of such wondrous beauty excite in the mind of the beholder. A delicate transparent mist hangs over the country; the moon shines bright amid heavy and singularly grouped clouds; the outlines of the objects which are illuminated by it, are clear and well-defined, while a magic twilight seems to remove from the eye those which are in shade. Scarcely a breath of air

* Known in the literary world as the companion of Commodore Krusenstern in his voyage round the world.

is stirring, and the neighbouring mimosas, that have folded up their leaves to sleep, stand motionless beside the dark crowns of the manga, the jaca, and the ethereal jambos. Or sometimes, a sudden wind arises, and the juiceless leaves of the *acaju* (*Anacardium occidentale*) rustle, the richly flowered *grumijama* and *pitanga* (two kinds of Brazilian myrtle) let drop a fragrant shower of snow-white blossoms; the crowns of the majestic palms wave slowly over the silent roof which they overshade, like a symbol of peace and tranquillity. Shrill cries of the cicada or grasshopper, and the tree frog make an incessant hum, and produce, by their monotony, a pleasing melancholy. A stream gently murmuring descends from the mountains, and the macuc (*Perdix guyanensis*), with its almost human voice, seems to call for help from a distance. Every quarter of an hour, different balsamic odours fill the air, and other flowers alternately unfold their leaves to the night, and almost overpower the senses with their perfume. Now, it is the bowers of *paullinias*, or the neighbouring orange grove; then, the thick tufts of the *eupatoria*, or the bunches of the flowers of the palms suddenly bursting, which disclose their blossoms, and thus maintain a constant succession of fragrance. While the silent vegetable world, illuminated by swarms of fire-flies, as by a thousand moving stars, charms the night by its delicious effluvia, brilliant lightnings play incessantly in the horizon, and elevate the mind in joyful admiration to the stars, which, glowing in solemn silence in the firmament above the continent and ocean, fill the soul with a presentiment of still sublimer wonders. In the enjoyment of the peaceful and magic influence of such nights, the newly arrived European remembers with tender longings his native home, till the luxuriant scenery of the tropics has become to him a second country." *

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. pp. 160—2.

Such are the charms of a tropical night, where Nature reserves half her fragrance, and more than half her wonders, for the season of repose. As a companion piece to this nocturnal sketch, the reader will be pleased to have presented to him the following description of a sunny ramble. "We traversed the principal street which leads through the quarter of Mato-porcos to the royal residences, S. Cristovâo and Santa Cruz; and passing a handsome country-seat, belonging to the bishop, we ascended the first hills of the Corcovado. Scarcely were we beyond the streets and the noise of the town, when we stopped, as if enchanted, in the midst of a strange and luxuriant vegetation. Our eyes were attracted, sometimes by gayly coloured birds or splendid butterflies, sometimes by the singular forms of the insects and the nests of wasps and termites hanging from the trees, sometimes by the beautiful plants scattered in the narrow valley, and on the gently sloping hills. Surrounded by lofty cassias, broad-leaved, white-stemmed cecropias, thick-crowned myrtles, large-flowered bignonias, climbing tufts of the mellifluous paullinias, far-spreading tendrils of the passion-flower, and of the richly flowering hatched coronilla, above which rise the waving summits of Macaubu palms, we fancied ourselves transported into the gardens of the Hesperides. Passing over several streams which were turned to good account, and hills covered with young coppice-wood, we at length reached the terrace of the eminence along which the spring water for the city is conducted. A delightful prospect over the bay, the verdant islands floating in it, the harbour with its crowd of masts and various flags, and the city stretched out at the foot of the most pleasant hills, the houses and steeples dazzling in the sun, was spread before our eyes. We dwelt long on the magical view of a great European city, rising here amidst the profusion of tropical vegetation. We then pursued the

road along the windings of the aqueduct. The channel is chiefly built of blocks of granite, but the vaulted covering, within which the naturalist finds many of the most singular phalangia, is of brick. Between the woody hills there are diversified romantic prospects into the valleys below. Sometimes you traverse open spots, where a stronger light is reflected from the flowery ground, or from the shining leaves of the neighbouring high trees; sometimes you enter a cool, shady bower. Here a thick wreath of paullinias, securidacæ, mikanias, passion-flowers, adorned with an incredible number of flowers, climb through the crowns of the celtis, the flowery rhexias and melastomas, bauhinias, delicate mimosas, shining myrtles; there, bushy nightshades, sebastanias, eupatorias, crotons, ægiphilas, and innumerable other plants, form an impenetrable thicket, amidst which grow immense stems of the silk cotton-tree (*bombax*), of silver-leaved cecropia, thorny Brazil-wood tree, of the lecythis, with its singular fruit resembling a pitcher, slender stems of the cabbage palm, and many other, in part still unnamed, sovereigns of the woods. The majestic sight, the repose and silence of these woods, interrupted only by the buzz of the gay humming-birds, fluttering from flower to flower, and by the singular notes of unknown birds and insects, peculiarly affect the mind of the man of sensibility, who feels himself as it were regenerated in the prospect of the glorious country.

" The stream which the aqueduct conveys to the city, falls in one place in beautiful cascades over the granite rocks. Oblique-leaved begonias, slender costus, and heliconias, the red flower stems of which shine with peculiar splendour, contrasted with the gloom of the forest, arborescent ferns and grasses, hanging bushes of vernonias, myrtles, and melastomas, bending under a load of blossoms, adorn the cool spots that surround them. Large

and small winged butterflies play with the rippling water; and birds of the gayest plumage contend, morning and evening, to overcome the noise of the brook by their diverse notes. This fountain is called *Caryoca*,* and the natives of the province have from it the name of Caryocas, which they give themselves with pride, but with which the inhabitants of the other provinces combine a satirical accessory meaning. Ingenious poets of Rio de Janeiro, inspired by the beauties that surround this spring, have exerted themselves to celebrate by their songs, the Naiad who brings so beneficial a present to their native city.†

" At the cascade of Caryoca, the road turns aside from the aqueduct, and leads over a dry eminence, covered with low trees and shrubs, to the forest which clothes the ridge of the Corcovado. The narrow, steep path passes over several streams. The vegetation is uncommonly strong and luxuriant; but the higher we ascend, the large trees gradually become more rare, and the bamboos and ferns more numerous, among which is a beautiful arborescent fern, fifteen feet in height. When you have made your way through the last thicket, you reach the green summit of the mountain, where single shrubs, among which is a magnificent arborescent vellosia, offer to the eye a vegetation resembling that of the higher campos of Minas. From this spot there is a beautiful view, extending over the woods, hills, valleys, and the city, to the sea, the broad surface of which is lost in the distant horizon. Towards the south, the mountain is broken, and the prospect loses itself in a steep declivity, bounded by the blue bay of Bota-Fogo; and still further, the bold masses of the Sugar-loaf Mountain close the

* " *Caryoca*, properly Caryb-oca, signifies, in the language of the natives, house of the whites; literally, house of stone."

† Not far from the source the valley declines from Laranjeiras towards the suburb of Catete.

horizon. At this elevation of about two thousand feet, the difference in the temperature is already so sensible, that you fancy yourself transported to a colder zone. Several streams, flowing from the ridge of the mountain, are always some degrees colder than the water in the aqueduct; and at the approach of sun-set, the summit of the mountain is enveloped in clouds, which gradually sink into the valley.

"Another equally interesting excursion that we used to make, was to Tijuca, a place about a mile from the city, which was formerly much frequented by the inhabitants. The way is on the high-road, past the royal country-seat of S. Cristovâo, which was built after his majesty's arrival, and by improvements in the grounds has been made a very agreeable retreat. The road lies between luxuriant hedges of castus, lantana, bougainvillia, cordia, tournefortia, and mimosa lebbek, above which the aloes shoot up their lofty flowering stems. The country is level up to the foot of the mountain; only an insulated verdant conical rock, in the vicinity of the royal seat, is a picturesque object rising above the variegated gardens and plantations. To the west of the road, a new aqueduct conveys the water of a stream from the mountains into the city. Citizens and peasants, on foot and on horseback, and frequently two persons mounted on one beast, give great animation to the road, on which the carriages of the rich can go only as far as S. Cristovâo. It is pleasing to see in this paradise, the traces of European industry, diligently cultivated land, and beautiful country-houses. Ascending the verdant slope of the mountain, and between numerous country-seats, along a mountain stream which turned several mills, we at last reached the summit, where the fatigue of the journey was rewarded with a fine view towards the suburb of S. Cristovâo."

The travellers obtained an indifferent lodging for the

night, at the "seat" of a Frenchman, where they were obliged to content themselves with some roasted potatoes for supper, and a wooden bench for a bed. At day-break, they resumed their journey, and just as the sun was rising, found themselves at the declivity of a high rock, from which a crystal brook, partly dissolved into mist, fell from a height of nearly a hundred feet into the valley, reminding them of the cascades of Naples and Tivoli, "the ornaments of a similar, but far less rich and magnificent landscape." Continuing their journey south-south-west, towards the opposite declivity of the mountain, they passed over thickly-wooded hills to a deep valley, and at length, came to the foot of the *Gavia*, a picturesque granite rock, which rises close to the eastern banks of Lake Camorim. Its sombre crags and woods, hanging over the smooth mirror of the water, reminded them of the lonely lakes of Switzerland, and of the principality of Saltzburg. The Camorim, called also Jacarepagua, is a brackish mere, connected towards the south with the sea, into which it conveys the tribute of many mountain streams, and by which it is swelled in high tides. Only a few wretched huts, belonging to fishermen of a mixed race, lie scattered in this solitude. The lake produces fish in such abundance, that the inhabitants of the district do not even think of cultivating the fertile forests that surround them: they plant scarcely sufficient maize for their own subsistence, but a considerable quantity of Spanish potatoes, water melons, and sugar-cane; the last of which they do not press, but merely suck out the juice. Their pale, weak, and sickly appearance indicates the effect of this diet in a country liable to be loaded with noxious exhalations.

In the vicinity of the Lagoa do Freitas* are the royal

* The road to this place passes over the *Beira da Lapa*, a sort of terrace, connected with the city, raised about seventy years ago in

powder manufactory and the botanical garden. The most important object of cultivation in the latter, is the Chinese tea-plant. When Dr. Von Spix visited Rio in 1817, there were about six thousand trees, planted in rows about three feet asunder. The climate seemed favourable to their growth. The tea is planted, plucked, and dried precisely in the same manner as in China itself. The Portuguese government had directed its particular attention to the cultivation of this plant. The Conde de Linhares, when minister, invited several hundred Chinese colonists, in order by their means to make the proper manner of growing and preparing tea better known. "These Chinese were said not to have been any of the inhabitants of the coast, who leave their country from poverty, and go to Java and the neighbouring islands, there to look for work, like the Galicians in Spain and Portugal; but people from the interior had been chosen, who were perfectly acquainted with the management of the tea-plant. Most of these Chinese, however, do not now live about the botanic garden, but in the vicinity of the royal residence of Santa Cruz, except a few who are employed here under the direction of Colonel Abreu, to tend the tea-plants, and gather and preserve the leaves. The leaves are plucked three times a year, and laid on gently heated kilns of clay, on which they are dried and crisped.

front of a rock, which, when it jutted further into the water, constituted one of the chief defences of the native Indians against their invaders. It then passes along the northern side of the bay of Bota-Fogo, a circular basin about a mile and a half in diameter, with one opening towards the east, between high granite rocks. Several roads branch off from the western end of this bay, one of which leads to the Lake of Freitas. The country about the lake, as well as the neighbouring suburbs of Bota-Fogo and Catete, is considered as remarkably healthy, on which account it is preferred by the rich inhabitants for their *chacras* (country houses); and the road is consequently much frequented.

The taste was strong, yet, by no means so delicately aromatic as the best kinds of Chinese tea, but rather earthy and rough. This disagreeable property must, however, be no discouragement in any new branch of cultivation, for it is a natural consequence of the plants not being perfectly accustomed to the climate." *

The " royal farm" of Santa Cruz, which is fifty miles south-west of Rio, was formerly a Jesuit convent. Mr. Mawe, who visited it during his residence in Brazil, in 1808, by desire of the regent, draws a not very pleasing picture of this royal domain. The house is neither large nor handsome. It is built in a quadrangular form, with an open court in the centre, and galleries inside, attached to the first and second floors. It contains thirty-six apartments; but, as they were originally intended for the use of the brotherhood, they are small and inconvenient. " In front of the house, to the southward," continues Mr. Mawe, " extends one of the finest plains in the world, two leagues square, watered by two rivers navigable for small craft, and bounded by fine, bold, rocky scenery, embellished in many parts with noble forest trees. This plain is clothed with the richest pasture, and supports from seven to eight thousand head of cattle. A considerable part of it lies low, and abounds with bogs, which might easily be laid dry, and rendered susceptible of cultivation by proper drainage. The park occupies, in its entire extent, upwards of one hundred square miles: a territory almost as large as some of the principalities of

* A curious manuscript of the date of 1578, cited by Mr. Southey, states, that tea had been found wild in the neighbourhood of Bahia, of similar quality to that of China. Mr. Koster refers to this, and adds, that a priest of considerable reputation as a botanist, thought he had discovered this plant in the neighbourhood of Olinda, but afterwards feared he had been too sanguine. Whether it is indigenous to Brazil, appears as yet to be doubtful.

Italy, and capable, by its proximity and connexion with the capital both by land and water, of being rendered one of the most productive and populous in Brazil. Under the present system of management, it is in a progressive state of deterioration. Two small corners, the best of the land, one about half a league square, and the other more than a league square, have been already, through disingenuous artifices, sold off; and the rest may in no long time be sacrificed to men whose cupidity stimulates them to depreciate its value, unless proper means are used to thwart their nefarious designs.

"The negroes on this estate, including all descriptions, amount to about 1500 in number. They are in general a very excellent class of men, tractable and gentle in their dispositions, and by no means deficient in intellect. Great pains have been taken to enlighten them: they are regularly instructed in the principles of the Christian faith, and have prayers publicly read to them morning and evening, at the commencement and close of their day's labour. Plots of ground, at their own choice, are assigned to each; and two days in the week, besides the incidental holidays, are allowed them to raise and cultivate produce for their own subsistence: the rest of their time and labour is devoted to the service of his highness. The system of management, however, is so bad, that they are half starved, almost destitute of clothing, and most miserably lodged; their average earnings do not amount to a penny per day each. A reform in the establishment might have been easily effected on the arrival of the Prince Regent; but it will now be very difficult, as the abuses have been tacitly sanctioned by the indifference of those whose duty and interest it was to correct them. In this extent of fine ground, scarcely an enclosure is made; the cultivated lands are full of weeds, and the coffee-plantations are little better than a mere coppice-wood, in which the wild

shrubs grow higher than the coffee-trees. The cattle are most deplorably neglected, and there is not upon the whole premises a horse fit for the meanest beggar to ride. Such was the state in which I found this rich and extensive district, which seems to have been destined by nature for the introduction of improvements that might produce, through the influence of high example, an entire change in the agricultural system of Brazil."

The Regent, anxious to retain Mr. Mawe in his service, offered him the management of this estate on advantageous terms; but that traveller had other objects in view, and eventually declined it. Dr. Von Spix, who visited it nine years after, found it still in the same neglected state. "They have not yet succeeded," he says, "in making a dairy in the European manner; and the King, who possesses in his very neighbourhood one of the finest herds of cows, must content himself with Irish salt butter, which has performed a voyage of several months." Santa Cruz, on which, a short time before, had been conferred the title and privilege of a town, is situated on a flat sandy eminence, entirely surrounded by a marshy plain, and consists, with the exception of the royal palace, of nothing but wretched clay huts, containing a few hundred inhabitants. A royal manufacture of charcoal had recently been established here. The few remaining Chinese settlers introduced by the Conde de Linhares, had made round their low huts, which were very neat inside, little plantations, adorned with the coffee-plant, and their favourite flower, the jessamine. But the botanic garden, or nursery, was little better than a desolate wilderness, and the kitchen garden near the palace appeared not better attended to. Sickness and regret for their native country had carried off many of the Chinese, and dislike of their situation had induced others to disperse.

Mrs. Graham, who visited Santa Cruz in 1823, found

the place somewhat improved, but the Chinese had disappeared. The tea-gardens, which occupy many acres of a rocky hill, have been adorned by the present sovereign of Brazil with Chinese gates and summer-houses, to correspond to their original design; and "placed among the beautiful tea-shrubs, whose dark shining leaves and myrtle-like flowers fit them for a parterre, they have," says this traveller, "no unpleasing effect. The walks are bordered on either hand with orange-trees and roses, and the garden hedge is a beautiful kind of mimosa; so that the *China* of Santa Cruz forms really a delightful walk. The Emperor, however, who perceives that it is more advantageous to sell coffee and buy tea, than to grow it at such expense, has discontinued the cultivation." The plants are, nevertheless, still thriving; and, in the neighbourhood, Mrs. Graham states, "wild tea" is found even more beautiful than the elegant Chinese shrub.

The estate of Santa Cruz, * which is seven miles in length, extends over a finely varied surface, watered by the rivers Guandu (great bay), and Taguahy (yellow water). The

* The road to Santa Cruz crosses a little hill to the left of S. Cristovão, and then enters on an extensive plain. At Venda Grande, seven miles from the city, the road divides; the branch to the right leading to Minas Geraes, the other to St. Paul's and the south-west. The latter is the road to Santa Cruz: it winds at the base of small, woody hills, until it reaches other plains four miles in extent, called the *Campinha*, the soil of which is a washed sand, formed by a decomposition of granite, and having the appearance of being once covered by the sea. The Venda of Campinha is reckoned the first stage from Rio: it is a distance of about eighteen miles. A league further of very pretty road leads to the *Engenho* (sugar-works) *dos Affonsos*,—an extensive estate, but only partially cleared. A few miles beyond its boundary, is the new church of S. Antonio de Lameron, on a little hill, overlooking a neat village and a pretty country. Beyond this place lies the *Engenho* of Mata Patiencia, where has been erected an eight-horse-power steam-engine, "one of the first, if not the very first erected in Brazil:" besides the rollers in the sugar-house, several saws are moved by it. Between two and three hours further brings the traveller to Santa Cruz.

latter gives its name to the little Indian village (*aldea*) of San Francisco Xavier de Itaguahy, formed by the Jesuits not long before their expulsion, and finely situated on the summit of a hill at the further end of the plain. At the foot of the hill, a very fine *engenho* is turned by the stream. Mrs. Graham entered several of the huts, which are very poor, barely weather-tight, and with little furniture besides hammocks and cooking utensils. But all the floors were cleanly swept, and a log of wood or a rude stool was generally to be found for the stranger, the people themselves squatting on the ground. The population appears to be decreasing, many of the half-civilised Indians having returned to their savage habits, on the departure of the Jesuits. The Guandu rises in the mountain of Marapicu, in the barony of Itanhae, and having received the Tingui, passes to the *engenho* of Palmares, where there is a wharf from which the produce of the neighbouring estates is conveyed to Sepetiva, a little port in the bay of Angra dos Reys, about seven miles from Santa Cruz, and a twenty-four hours' passage from Rio. In 1810, there was an intention of uniting the Guandu to the Itaipu by a short canal, by which means the navigation would have been direct to Rio; but the design was abandoned.*

To return to Rio. The royal residence of S. Cristovâo (formerly called the *quinta* of Boavista) stands on a gentle eminence, nearly surrounded by high and picturesque mountains, and commands a fine, though distant view of the bay of Rio, the city, the northern mountains, and the plain of Mato-porcos. A private merchant was building it,

* Mr. Luccock, referring either to this, or to a third river flowing from the plains of Santa Cruz into this bay, states, that a British ship of ninety guns had ascended the river to that point The mouth of the Taguahy is about two miles further westward, and these two rivers were connected, he says, by a canal, in the time of the Jesuits.

when the Prince Regent arrived as an exile from Lisbon, and he presented it to his sovereign.* In front of it is placed a gateway, sent to the Prince (now King John VI.) by the Duke of Northumberland,—an exact copy of that leading to Sion House. The effect is singularly incongruous. The gates are placed in the centre, between pillars of Brazilian granite, with a lodge on each side: the remainder of the screen is formed by palisades of Portuguese workmanship. The court in front of the palace, however, instead of being entered by the gateway, is accessible only by a road which enters at the left corner; for that which should form a road to the gateway, has been allowed to remain in its natural state of hollow and uneven ground, overgrown with underwood. "At present," says Mr. Henderson, "the gates are in disuse, the lodges closed, and with the aid of the dirt and gunpowder arising from the fireworks ranged along their front on occasions of religious festivals, the whole already appears in a course of dilapidation. The palace is one story high, perfectly plain, without any pretensions to elegance, or the semblance of any order of architecture, and can boast of nothing but the beauty of its situation. It might, indeed, be mistaken at a distance for a manufactory, in consequence of the windows being so crowded together, particularly at night, when it is lighted up."

Mr. Luccock describes it as small, formal, and ill-contrived, but possessing the great advantage of varandas or colonnades, on three sides, with glass windows, which can be closed or laid open at pleasure. Since these travellers visited Rio, however, the palace has been greatly enlarged and improved under the superintendence of Mr. Johnson, who came to Brazil with the Duke of Northumberland's

* So Mr. Luccock informs us. Mrs. Graham states, that the palace once belonged to a convent, which appears to be an error.

present. A more uniform appearance has been given to the building, which is somewhat in the *Morcsco* style, and the whole is coloured yellow, with white mouldings. The court is planted with weeping willows. Behind the palace is a farm, which, when visited by Mrs. Graham in 1823, appeared in good order; "and the village of the slaves, with its little church, looked more comfortable," she says, "than I could have believed it possible for a village of slaves to do. The Imperial family now live entirely here, and go to town only on formal business or occasions of state."

BAY OF RIO.

It is not twenty years since all around the Bay of Rio de Janeiro there appeared an interminable forest. At this period (1808), only two boats and about a dozen canoes plied upon the water for hire. St. Domingo and Praya Grande, on the opposite side of the Bay, were small pleasant villages, consisting of a few scattered houses embosomed in woods. Little cultivated land was discernible in the wide landscape. The advance of the city on spots so recently covered with wood, surprised even the inhabitants. The shores of the Bay, which is stated to be not less than thirty-two leagues in circumference, are still imperfectly described. Some of the smaller inlets have been compared to Sydney Cove in New Holland; and "something like the whole," says Mr. Luccock, "but on a smaller scale, is said to exist in Asia Minor, near to Crete:" he refers, possibly, to the Gulf of Marmorice. "Nothing that I have ever seen," says Mrs. Graham, "is comparable in beauty to this bay. Naples, the Firth of Forth, Bombay harbour, and Trincomalee, each of which I thought perfect in their beauty, all must yield to this, which surpasses each in its different way." In the bay of St. Christophe, one of the smaller bays which branch from it, is the *Sacco*, or little

recess of Gamboa, where is the beautiful spot which has been chosen for the Protestant burial-ground. It is called the *Praya de Gamboa*, and the last-mentioned traveller describes it as one of the loveliest spots she ever beheld. It slopes gradually towards the road along the shore, commanding beautiful views in every direction. "At the highest point, there is a pretty building, consisting of three chambers: one serves as a place of meeting or waiting for the clergyman occasionally; one as a repository for the mournful furniture of the grave; and the largest, which is between the other two, is generally occupied by the body of the dead for the few hours, it may be a day and a night, which can in this climate elapse between death and burial. * In front of this are the various stones, and urns, and vain memorials we raise to relieve our own sorrow; and between these and the road are some magnificent trees. Three sides of this field are fenced by rock or wood." A British church, † a British hospital, and a British burial-ground, are the appropriate monuments of our countrymen in this part of the new world.

The bay of S. Christophe is separated by Ponte Caju, a fine elevated tongue of land, from that of Maricana,

* "The first funeral service was performed in April 1811, which was too soon followed by others. They seemed to have a great effect on the minds of the Brazilians who witnessed them. The situation, ill fitted for a cemetery, would have been a fine one for a residence."—*Luccock's Notes*, p. 258.

† The foundation stone of the first protestant church in South America was laid at Rio on the 12th of Aug. 1819, and dedicated to St. George and St. John, in honour of the sovereigns of England and Brazil. The site is in the *rua dos Borbanes*. On this occasion, a great portion of the English resident merchants attended, and an appropriate address was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Crane. The architect was Mr. Johnson, who superintended the alterations of S. Cristovão; the builder a Portuguese. Previously to the erection of this building, the English assembled for divine service in a room. —*Henderson's History*, p. 96.

which takes its name from a river flowing into its further extremity. Ponte Caju was formerly an island, and there are still traces of the narrow channel which connected the two bays. "A few years," says Mr. Luccock, "will unite the island of Ferreiro to the main land, and render the passage round the point still more difficult." * On the other hand, the island of Villegagnon, which is exposed to the whole weight of the ocean, is suffering continually from the attrition of the waves. "Even the rocks which, three centuries ago, surrounded it like so many sentinels, are nearly buried beneath the waves. A large mass disappeared during a gale in the winter of 1817; and on the beach to the leeward of them, particularly on the *Praya do Flamingo*, is often found a substance thrown up by the surf, which may be described as the rotten-stone of gneiss."

On a boldly projecting knoll, at about a third part of the elevation of one of the hills on the eastern shore, stand the Indian village and church of St. Lorenzo, founded by Mem da Sa in 1567, and distinguished in the history of Brazil for the gallant defence made by an Indian chief against a French brig of war which attacked the place in 1568. † This is the only place in the immediate neighbourhood of Rio where there are still remains of the once numerous native tribes. The present inhabitants are stated to be descendants of converted Indians brought

* The new land made in this part of the coast, within a comparatively recent period, is very considerable. The *Sacco dos Alfares* formerly joined the sea through the Campo da Santa Anna and the spot where are now the public gardens. The channel was filled up by the accumulation of sand from the *Sacco da Gloria*. In 1650, the *Largo da Lapa* was under water. In 1700, a stream passed eastward from Mata Cavallos to the harbour, and half a century later, the Campo da Santa Anna was marshy. The isthmus between the bay of Santa Anna and that of Praya Grande was a channel deep enough for a brig in 1568.

† He had only one gun, and for balls, hard, rounded stones; yet he succeeded in beating off the assailant with great slaughter.

hither by the Jesuits from the district of Goytacazes. They are employed in making earthen vessels for cookery, for which the city furnishes a market. "Like their ancestors, who excelled in the same art three centuries ago, they use no machinery in moulding the clay, but bring it into shape by twirling their thumbs. The women attend the ovens, and bake the pans with care and skill. No glazing is used, yet they bear the fire well." The necessary smoothness is produced by means of a small sea-shell which they wet with their lips.

Prince Maximilian of Wied Neuwied, who visited this village in 1815, gives the following description of the inhabitants. "The greater part of these people still evidently retain their genuine Indian physiognomy: others, on the contrary, seem to be rather of a mixed descent. The distinguishing characteristics of the Brazilian race, which I first observed here, but, in the sequel, always found confirmed, are,—a moderate-sized, often small, well-formed body, in the man, strong-limbed and muscular; a reddish or yellowish-brown colour; very thick, long, coal-black, lank hair; a broad face, often with the eyes placed rather obliquely, but frequently handsome, with strongly marked features, and for the most part rather thick lips; their hands and feet small and well-formed; and the men have thin, strong beards. The walls of the huts are constructed of lattice-work of staves, the intervals being filled up with clay: the roofs are covered with leaves of the cocoa palm. The furniture is very simple. Rush mats, laid on rude tressels, supply the place of beds: sleeping nets, made of cotton lines, which were used by them in former times, are still occasionally seen. Both these kinds of beds have been adopted by the lower classes throughout Brazil. Large pots called *talha*, in which water is kept constantly cool, are in use here, as in the whole country: they are made of a porous clay, through

which the water slowly filters, and being condensed on the outside of the vessel, keeps that within cool. To these vessels belongs the half of a cocoa-nut shell, with a wooden handle fixed in it to serve as a ladle. Some earthen pots for cooking, called *panellas; cuias*, or gourd shells, to be used as plates; with several trifling articles of dress, and perhaps a gun or a bow and arrows for the chase, constitute the rest of the furniture. All these people are partly supported by their plantations of mandioc and maize." * Mr. Luccock describes them as mild, but, though thus industriously occupied, indolent. They are very expert in the use of the bow, frequently substituting round balls of clay for arrows. In rowing and managing the canoe, they are equally dexterous. They have, for the most part, lost their own language and manners, and have adopted those of their conquerors. Some of the old men, however, still converse pretty fluently in the aboriginal dialect.

About a mile nearer to the point of Armazem, lies the estate presented by the King of Portugal, when regent, to Sir Sydney Smith. The house is small, the situation oppressively hot, the land rocky, and of small value. "At the point itself are some large warehouses, originally constructed for the extraction of oil from the whale, when that fish rolled his enormous bulk in the harbour of Rio." The whales frequent the Brazilian coast in great numbers, but they no longer enter this bay.

Although no large river discharges itself into the Bay, a number of small streams, many of them navigable to some distance, have their outlet towards the upper end of it. Among these are, the *Iraja*, which issues from one of the small lakes, and affords navigation with the tide to

* Travels in Brazil: by Prince Maximilian of Wied Neuwied. 4to. 1820. pp. 30—4.

its port of the same name; the *Miriti* * (little water), which traverses a marshy country, and is navigable only for three miles in a direct line to its port of the same name; the *Sarapuhi*, navigable only for about a league; the *Iguassu*, navigable for four leagues, and having for its tributary the *Iguare*, which affords navigation for a mile to the port of the same name; the *Maraby*, † flowing from the Serra of Boavista, and navigable to the port of Couto, three leagues above its mouth; it receives the *Dos Ramos*, which is navigable for eight miles to the skirts of the Serra Mantiqueira, in which it originates; the *Inhumirim*, navigable for three leagues to the flourishing port of Estrella; the *Suruhy* ‡ (rapid water), issuing from the Organ Moun-

* In its eommon state, Mr. Luecoek says, the *Miriti* has scarcely any current, and is very shallow even at its mouth, but there are seasons in which it swells so as to become dangerous. The soil on its banks is very rich, and produees abundant erops of sugar, milho, and mandioe.

† This is, apparently, the "noisy rivulet" referred to, but not named, by Mr. Luecock, to which he aseribes the formation of the alluvial soil of the rich plains of Oitu. He crossed the stream at a considerable distance from its mouth, where a great road enters the interior. Immediately after erossing it, he began to aseend a formidable pass, by a steep zigzag path, making fourteen turns, yet so steep, that, from the highest point of the ladder (an elevation of about 4000 feet), he threw with ease a stone over all the stages. Many cattle, in their way to Rio, descend this pass, and severe aceidents are frequent. On the right of this pass, a great naked eone towers nearly 2000 feet higher. From this spot, the road advanees nearly sixty miles in a westerly direction, to the Paraiba, through a broken and thinly inhabited country. The principal places lying on it are Pao Grande and Uva.—*Notes, &c.* p. 301.

‡ The mouth of the Suruhy is stated by Mr. Luceock to be about sixty yards wide; its bed is shallow, sometimes bordered by marshes, but, in general, the land is bold and lofty. The current was so strong, owing to recent rain, that, during three hours of hard labour, they were able to advance only two miles. On the right margin is the parish of St. Nicolau, comprising a mountainous district of ten miles from north to south, by three in width, partly planted with mandioc, rice, and coffee, but principally famed for the banana fruit, whieh it yields in great abundanee. "Of ten

tains, and navigable by boats for seven miles; the *Iriry* * (river of shells), which comes from marshy land, and has a navigation of only two miles; the *Magéassu*, which descends from the Organ Mountains, bathes the town of

decent houses below the church of St. Nicholas, four are vendas, sufficiently filled with the crews of saveiros; a circumstance which shews that the population and commerce of the neighbourhood must be considerable. Here the river is about forty yards wide, and is joined by a stream (the Goya) nearly half as large: down both of them are brought for exportation, vegetables, fruit, milho, and firewood." *Notes*, pp. 342, 3.

* "The Iriri is a hundred yards broad at the mouth, and more than commonly abundant in fishes. The right bank is, for some distance, low, flat, and muddy, forming a soil for the growth of mangue. About a mile within it, we found many saveiros taking in shells, which are carried away to be converted into lime. Over the bed in which they lie, is a stratum of stiff, but unconsolidated clay, nearly four feet thick. The bed itself is not more than six or eight inches in depth, and the shells appear as though they had not long been buried, without any marks of decay or petrifaction: among them is no mixture of clay or sand. Immediately beyond this spot is some bold ground; but a little further onward, the stream makes its way through pestiferous marshes covered with mangue, and seems occasionally to flow with violence. Where it meets the tide, there is a broader expanse of water, with a bank in the midst of it; and the conflux, it is probable, sometimes forms a dangerous whirlpool. At one of the angles of the river into which we were hurried by the current, we sounded, and found nearly fifty feet of water. Having ascended about eight miles, we got into a sort of gutter, not twice the width of our boat, with marshy ground on each side of it to a great extent. From the roof of our boat we could discern, over the mangue, the broad sail of a saveiro, and the tiles of a hut, about 400 yards distant. We shouted, and fired several shots as signals for a canoe to come to our relief, for the boat could proceed no further, and the marsh was too soft to walk upon. At and beyond the spot where the hut stood, it was, no doubt, more solid. Round about it is a wild screen of mountains, and among them the Organ Pipes rose before us in all their rugged grandeur. The seeming impossibility of reaching the house, and of procuring assistance from it, the approach of evening, the ebbing of the tide, and the annoyance of myriads of insects, compelled us to return with our chief object unattained."—*Luccock's Notes*, pp. 344, 5.

Mage, which gives name to it, and has a navigation of ten miles; the *Iguapimirim*, descending from the same mountains;* the *Guapiassu*, or *Macacu*, one of the largest streams which fall into the bay, and navigable for fifteen leagues, during which it receives several tributaries from the same mountains; the *Guaxindiba*, flowing from the Serra Taypu; and the *Emboassu*, which has its source in the Serra St. Gonsalo, and is navigable with the tide for a short distance.

By means of these streams, different parts of the country to the northward of the capital may be visited with considerable facility. Mr. Luccock, to whom we are indebted for the greater portion of our information relative to this part of the country, made an aquatic excursion for the purpose of exploring these waters. He ascended the Iguassu a considerable distance by means of a canoe. It is a fine, broad, deep river, flowing in a very crooked channel, with so strong a current, at all times, that, were it not for its curving direction, no vessel, it is supposed, would be able to stem it. In the rainy season, it flows with impetuosity, and widely breaks its bounds. "On both sides, its banks are covered with tall aquatic plants, whose juices serve further to discolour a stream which is dingy from its source. When floods prevail, these fields of vegetables are torn from their roots by the turbulent waters, carried downwards by the current, and thrown on shore near the mouth of the river, where they serve to extend such marshes as those on which they grew. In more tranquil seasons they stand erect, and form a sort of lane of tall reeds with curious bulbular heads, and serve as a retreat to a great variety of water-fowls. About five miles from its mouth, this river is joined by the

* Near the right bank of this river, is the parish of Ajuda, the soil of which is remarkably fertile, and is planted with mandioc, rice, and coffee.

Pilar, from the north-east, which has already passed near to a few small houses and one spacious building, forming a village of the same name (Our Lady of Pilar). Two miles further up, we gain the first firm footing on the banks of the Iguassu, where, on the left hand, stands a small Benedictine convent, pleasantly situated under the shade of a considerable hill, but with its estate so grossly neglected, that the chief object seems to be the maintenance of a *venda* and an extensive brick-work. After rowing six hours longer, we reached the *Porto dos Saveiros*; so named from the vessels, from ten to forty tons burden, which ascend thus far to take in the cargoes brought hither by canoes. It lies at the foot of considerable hills; one of which I climbed, and from its summit overlooked plains twelve miles long, and six or seven broad, and the river which we had ascended thus far, writhing among them like a snake. Here we exchanged our launch for a canoe, in which we reached the bridge of Maranbaya, after a toilsome progress of other six hours. At this place, the river is about twenty feet wide, while, at the convent and at Porto dos Saveiros, it is thrice that width, and at its mouth full two hundred yards." * The upper plain watered by this river is elsewhere described by this traveller as in general sandy; but, being occasionally overflowed in many parts, a black sediment is left, fit for the growth of rice. The surface is broken by numerous abrupt round hills, called, from their shapes, half-oranges.

The Inhumirim, which Mr. Luccock ascended to Porto d'Estrella, is described as a fine river, running in a deep bed with a sluggish channel, among high, rugged lands, and bold, rocky masses, separated, in many places, by broad swamps. At its entrance, on the right, lies a pile

* Luccock's Notes, &c. pp. 338, 9.

of broken rocks, which appear as if they had been tossed from a considerable distance, and had fallen on each other. "Some of the rounded masses seem to have been broken by their mutual concussion, and the several fragments lie by the side of each other; and, where a broad, flat stone has been undermost, it has, in some instances, been split in a ray-like fracture, and partly sunk into the soil. Such appearances are common in the country surrounding the Upper Bay, and unite to shew that many parts now detached from each other, once formed large solid masses, and that they were removed from their native situations while in that state." The shores of this river, as well as of its tributaries, of which there are several,* are well cultivated. At its mouth, it is two hundred yards wide; at the port, not more than seventy. It is connected by a channel with the river Pilar, which flows into the Iguassu.

RIO TO PARAIBA NOVA.

Porto d'Estrella, situated in the angle of the confluence of the Saracuruna with the Inhumirim, is a place of considerable traffic, being on the main road to the mines. Mr. Luccock thus describes its state in 1816. "Though it has not many houses, some of them are uncommonly good ones. The church" (or chapel of Our Lady) "stands on a round precipitous hill, about two hundred feet above the level of the water, and has an advantage in situation, which it wants in point of size, commanding extensive views of rich plains towards the south and west, and of mountains covered with forests to the

* One of these, the *Jaguamirim*, flowing from the morasses, affords navigation for six miles. Another, the *Saracuruna*, descends from the serra of the same name, and is navigable only for a league. The *Figueyra*, a third, comes from Serra Frade; and boats go up very near its source, where it has the name of *Cayoaba*.

north. Here are two quays and suitable warehouses, from which is embarked for the capital most of the produce of the interior. As the principal roads of the country begin or terminate at this spot, here also are landed, and loaded on the backs of mules, all the goods destined for the northern part of the capitania of Rio de Janeiro, for Minas Geraes, Matto Grosso, and Goyaz,—for places, some of which are 1500 or 2000 miles distant. The village is, in consequence, full of mules, their drivers, and people collected from almost every part of the central provinces; the sides of the river are crowded with *saveiros* (small vessels); new lands are enclosed and cultivated, new societies formed, and the people advance in knowledge and civilization. The first time I visited this spot, since which several years have elapsed, we found the inhabitants so rude, that we thought it prudent to haul off from the village, to sleep on our arms aboard, and to appoint a sentinel for the night. We were also plagued with mosquitoes beyond endurance. Since that period, I have received here all the attentions which a stranger is entitled to expect, and enjoyed a variety of comforts which the growing wealth of the place has enabled it to collect. It has imbibed the spirit of a thoroughfare in more respects than one, having become not only civil, but independent, frank, and haughty in a measure by no means common in Brazil." *

The novel sight (to a European) of the long trains of

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 340, 1. Dr. Von Spix, who visited Porto d'Estrella in 1817, gives a strangely different account of the place in some respects. "There is always a great deal of business going on here, and it is therefore very strange that there is not a single good dwelling-house, or even a secure magazine for the goods. Every body must submit to take shelter in a wretched, scarcely-covered shed, where goods are likewise deposited."—*Travels*, vol. i. p. 234.

mules laden with chests and packages, arriving from the interior or returning, is thus described by another modern traveller.

"The European, accustomed to the conveyance of considerable burthens in waggons, is astonished at the sight of so many cargoes divided into small parcels, which are abandoned to the discretion of the beasts or of an unskilful driver, daily loaded and unloaded several times, either in the open air or in exposed sheds, scarcely protected against the rain and the weather, and often carried in this manner several hundred miles. The caravans (*tropas*), however, particularly on the better road from Saint Paul and Minas to the capital, are so well organised, that comparatively very little risk is to be apprehended. Each caravan, consisting of from twenty to fifty mules, is conducted by an *arreiro* on horseback: he gives the necessary orders for the caravan to set out, to halt, or to encamp for the night; takes care that the burthens are well balanced, and the pack-saddles in good condition; repairs them when they gall, cures the sick beasts, and attends to the shoes. Under him are the drivers (*toccadores*), each of whom, generally, has to manage a division (*lote*) of seven mules. They go on foot, put the burthens off and on, feed and water the animals, drive them to the pasture, and cook the provisions. The *arreiro*, generally a free mulatto, frequently attends to the sale and purchase of goods in the city, and acts as commissioner for the proprietor of the caravan. The drivers are for the most part negroes, who soon become accustomed to the employment, and prefer this wandering life to the labour of gold-washing and working in the plantations." * The most important articles of trade brought hither by the inhabitants of Minas Geraes, who

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. i. pp. 232, 3.

are called *Minciros*, are raw cotton and coarse cotton stuffs. On account of the great traffic between this port and the capital, boats set out daily from Rio between eleven and twelve o'clock, as soon as the sea-breeze springs up, and arrive at Porto d'Estrella in the evening: they leave the latter place every evening after sunset, sail through the night, and reach the city by daybreak.

About four miles to the north-east of Porto d'Estrella is the parish of Our Lady of Piedade d'Inhumirim, situated at the angle of the confluence of this river with the small river Cruz. In this district is the *Mandioca* estate, purchased by the Russian consul-general, M. V. Langsdorff, for 1000*l.*, and estimated to be ten square miles in extent. The road to Piedade lies through a low country, between hedges of the richest variety of shrubs, having on the left hand a range of mountains clothed with thick forests: on the right, the broad valley gently declines towards the sea. At Piedade, a village consisting of several scattered houses and a chapel, the road enters on a verdant plain, bounded by gardens, plantations, and meadows, with the massy summits of the Organ Mountains in the background: it gradually rises, passing over low woody hills, as it approaches the mountains. The Mandioca estate, so called from the excellence of the mandioc roots cultivated here, is bounded on the north-west by a chain of mountains, traversed by several narrow dells, and covered with woods, which extend from the valley to the lofty summits of the Organ range. In the midst of these great forests are the tracts (*rossados*) which, after burning the felled trees, are planted with mandioc, maize, beans, coffee, &c. These plantations are generally abandoned after a few harvests, and in the course of a few years are covered again with a thick brushwood. The primeval forests, which stand as testimonies of the productive energies of the new continent in all their original

wildness, still unprofaned by human hands, are called in Brazil, *mato virgem*, virgin forests. We shall have frequent occasion to refer to this feature of Brazilian scenery; but this seems a proper place to introduce the description given by Dr. Von Spix and other travellers, of the wonders of

A BRAZILIAN FOREST.

THE prevailing character of these sylvan regions, is a magnificence of which the untravelled European can form no conception, arising not so much from the majestic productions with which they abound, as from the infinite diversity in the forms and colours of stems, leaves, and blossoms, which every where presents itself, and the luxuriance of the never-ceasing power of vegetation, which clothes every stem with verdant, flowering, parasitical plants. "Almost every one of these sovereigns of the forest," says Dr. V. Spix, "is distinguished, in the total effect of the picture, from its neighbour. While the silk-cotton tree (*bombax pentandrum*), partly armed with strong thorns, begins at a considerable height from the ground to spread out its thick arms, and its digitated leaves are grouped in light and airy masses, the luxuriant lecythis and the Brazilian anda shoot out at a less height many branches profusely covered with leaves, which unite to form a verdant arcade. The jacaranda (rose-wood tree) attracts the eye by the lightness of its double-feathered leaves: the large gold-coloured flowers of this tree and the ipe (*bignonia chrysantha*), dazzle by their splendour, contrasted with the dark green of the foliage. The spondias (*s. myrobalanus*) arches its pennated leaves into light oblong forms. A very peculiar and most striking effect in the picture is produced by the trumpet-tree (*cecro-*

pia peltata) among the other lofty forms of the forest: the smooth ash-grey stems rise slightly bending to a considerable height, and spread out at the top into verticillate branches, which have at the extremities large tufts of deeply lobated white leaves. The flowering cæsalpinia; the airy laurel; the lofty *geoffrœa*; the soap-trees with their shining leaves; * the slender Barbadoes cedar; the ormosia with its pennated leaves; the tapia or garlic pear-tree, so called from the strong smell of its bark; the maina; and a thousand not yet described trees are mingled confusedly together, forming groupes agreeably contrasted by the diversity of their forms and tints. Here and there, the dark crown of a Chilian fir (*araucaria imbricata*), among the lighter green, appears like a stranger amid the natives of the tropics; while the towering stems of the palms with their waving crowns, are an incomparable ornament of the forests, † the beauty and majesty of which no language can describe.

* *Sapindus saponaria.* The fruit is brought to the city in large quantities: the poorer class use them instead of soap. "In many years, one of these trees, which are generally about the size of our nut-trees, produces several bushes of this fruit, which contains a great quantity of saponaceous matter."—*V. Spix*, p. 280.

† The cocoa-palm is frequently seen above thirty feet high. Mr. Mawe measured a fallen tree, (he does not mention the species,) which was full seventy-six inches in diameter at the thick end, and above twenty-five yards in length. Prince Maximilian says: "The colossal trees are so lofty, that our fowling-pieces could not carry to the top of them, so that we often fired in vain at the finest birds." *Travels*, p. 43.

Mr. Luccock describes a very singular tree, "one of those vegetable productions," he says, "whose size astonishes the English traveller. It is here called a *gamelleiro*," (from *gamella*, a great wooden bowl or trough,) "because from its trunk are turned those large bowls which are used as baths. The smallest part of its stem was eight feet above the ground, and there the circumference measured fourteen feet. Immediately below this line, the roots begin to project in the manner of buttresses, and produce that kind of timber which is particularly esteemed in forming the knees of large

"If the eye turns from the proud forms of those ancient denizens of the forest, to the more humble and lower which clothe the ground with a rich verdure, it is delighted with the splendour and gay variety of the flowers. The purple blossoms of the rhexia; profuse clusters of the melastoma, myrtles, and the eugenia; the delicate foliage of many rubiaceæ and ardisiæ, their pretty flowers blended with the singularly formed leaves of the theophrasta; the conchocarpus; the reed-like dwarf palms; the brilliant spadix of the costus; the ragged hedges of the maranta, from which a squamous fern rises; the magnificent stiftia, thorny solana, large flowering gardenias and coutereas, enlivened with garlands of mikonia and bignonia; the far-spreading shoots of the mellifluous paullinias, dalechampias, and the bauhinea with its strangely lobated leaves; strings of the leafless milky *lianes* (bind-weed), which descend from the highest summits of the trees, or closely twine round the strongest trunks, and gradually kill them; lastly, those parasitical plants by which old trees are invested with the garment of youth, the grotesque species of the pothos and the arum, the superb flowers of the orchideæ, the bromelias which catch the rain water, the tillandsia, hanging down like *lichen pulmonarius*, and a multiplicity of strangely formed ferns: all these admirable productions combine to form a scene which alternately fills the European naturalist with delight and astonishment.

ships. These terminate in the roots, which run along the surface of the ground, and appear above it in a circle of seventy-six paces, each of which was intended to measure a yard. One of these roots, at the distance of sixteen feet from the body of the tree, rose wholly above the soil: its girth measured four feet. The branches, which begin to expand immediately above the line where the trunk was measured, extend on each side thirty-five feet, so that the whole head forms a well-clothed hemisphere of more than 200 feet in circumference."—*Notes*, &c. p. 393.

"But the animal kingdom which peoples those ancient forests, is not less distinguished than the vegetable world. The naturalist who is here for the first time, does not know whether he shall most admire the forms, hues, or voices of the animals. Except at noon, when all living creatures in the torrid zone seek shade and repose, and when a solemn silence is diffused over the scene illumined by the dazzling beams of the sun, every hour of the day calls into action a distinct race of animals. The morning is ushered in by the howling of the monkeys, the high and deep notes of the tree-frogs and toads, the monotonous chirp of the grasshoppers and locusts. When the rising sun has dispelled the mists which preceded it, all creatures rejoice in the return of day. The wasps leave their long nests which hang down from the branches; the ants issue from their dwellings, curiously built of clay, with which they cover the trees, and commence their journey on the paths they have made for themselves, as is done also by the termites which cast up the earth high and far around.* The gayest butterflies,

* "It is scarcely possible," says Mr. Luccock, "to conceive of a greater plague than that which is produced by the ants. In the forests below, they form their nests beneath the surface of the ground, or pile cones of sand, eight or ten feet high, generally round the root or stem of a tree. But, on these heights, their nests stand by the road side, in the form of rough pillars made of earth and leaves, more than eight feet high and three in diameter. They resemble bee-hives in shape; and at first I thought them the production and abode of bees; for some of them have been opened with a *machado* (axe), for the purpose, as I was told, of procuring honey. Examining them, I found the inside hollow and very black; the walls were from six inches to a foot thick, and full of innumerable passages communicating with each other, but with the external air only at the base, which is a little contracted, and thus sheltered from rain. The upper part frequently appears patched, as though an addition had been made to the cells, or a breach repaired. Whether the bees drive out the ants, or only take possession of a deserted hive, I know not; but I found they were of

rivalling in splendour the colours of the rainbow, especially numerous hesperiæ, flutter from flower to flower, or seek their food on the rocks, or, collected in separate companies, on the cool streams.* The blue shining Menelaus, Nestor, Adonis, Laertes, the bluish-white Idea, and the large Eurolychus with its oscellated wings, hover like birds between the green bushes in the moist valleys. The Feronia, with rustling wings, flies rapidly from tree to tree, while the owl-moth (*noctua strix*) the largest of the moth kind, sits immovably on the trunk, with outspread wings awaiting the approach of evening. Myriads of the most brilliant beetles buzz in the air, and sparkle like jewels on the fresh green of the leaves, or on the odorous flowers. Meantime, agile lizards, remarkable for their form, size, and brilliant colours, and dark-coloured, poisonous, or harmless serpents, which exceed in splendour the enamel of the flowers, glide out of the leaves, the hollows of the trees, and holes in the ground, and creeping up the stems, bask in the sun, and lie in wait for insects and birds. From this moment all is life and activity. Squirrels and troops of gregarious monkeys issue inquisitively from the interior of the woods to the plantations, and leap, whistling and chattering, from tree to tree. Gallinaceous jacues,† hoccoes,‡ and pigeons leave the branches, and wander

a small brown species, such as I had never noticed below. Within the hollow they deposite their round balls of wax and honey, and are deprived of it by travellers."—*Notes, &c.* pp. 404-5.

Henderson enumerates among the various species of the Brazilian bee, "the *cupimeira*, so denominated because it occupies the houses deserted by the *cupim* (ant)."

* A collection of 1600 different species of butterflies had already been made in Brazil some years ago.

† The jacu is the size of a large capon, black, with the figure of a turkey-hen. The jacu-tinga and jacu-pemba are varieties of the same genus.

‡ Probably the *soco* is meant, described by Henderson as about

about on the moist ground in the woods. Other birds of the most singular forms, and of the most superb plumage, flutter singly or in companies through the fragrant bushes. The green, blue, or red parrots, assembled on the tops of the trees, or flying towards the plantations and islands, fill the air with their screams. The toucan, sitting on the extreme branches, rattles with his large hollow bill, and in loud, plaintive tones calls for rain. The busy orioles creep out of their long, pendent, bag-shaped nests to visit the orange-trees, and their sentinels announce with a loud screaming cry the approach of man. The fly-catchers, sitting aloof, watching for insects, dart from the trees and shrubs, and with rapid flight catch the hovering menelaus, or the shining flies, as they buzz by. Meantime, the amorous thrush* (*turdus Orpheus*), con-

the size of a large capon, without a tail; there are several species, a white, an ash-coloured, and other varieties.

* Alluding, apparently, to this bird, the author says in another place: "We first observed in these woods the notes of a greyish-brown bird, probably a thrush, which frequents the bushes and grounds in damp, low woods, and sings with numerous repetitions through the musical scale from H 1 to A 2 (of the German scale) so regularly, that not a single note is wanting. It commonly sings each note four or five times over, and then proceeds imperceptibly to the following quarter-tone. It is usual to deny to the songsters of the American forests all melody and expression, and to allow them no pre-eminence but splendour of plumage. But if, in general, the pretty natives of the torrid zone are more distinguished by the beauty of their colours, than by fulness and power of note, and seem inferior to our nightingale in clearness and melodiousness of tone, yet, this little bird, among others, is a proof that they are at least not destitute of the principles of melody." (vol. i. p. 287.)

Mr. Henderson, in his list of Brazilian birds, has the *Sabia*, "a kind of thrush, and the greatest singer in the Brazil: its song does not differ from the blackbird." Prince Maximilian notices the same bird. "The red-bellied thrush, here called *sabiah*, sat pouring forth its melancholy though pleasing song on the tops of the bushes." (*Travels*, p. 53.) Mr. Luccock has a remarkable anecdote

cealed in the thicket, pours forth her joy in a strain of beautiful melody; the chattering manakins, calling from the close bushes, sometimes here, sometimes there, in the full tones of the nightingale, amuse themselves in misleading the hunters; and the woodpecker makes the distant forests resound while he pecks the bark from the trees. Above all these strange voices, the metallic tones of the uraponga (or guiraponga) sound from the tops of the highest trees, resembling the strokes of the hammer on the anvil, which appearing nearer or more remote according to the position of the songster, fill the wanderer with astonishment. While thus every living creature by its actions and voice greets the splendour of the day, the delicate humming-birds, rivalling in beauty and lustre diamonds, emeralds, and sapphires, hover round the brightest flowers. *

of this bird. The incident, an affecting one, led him, he says, to doubt whether the song of birds is always an indication of pleasurable feeling. He had shot a "sabiar," whose note he describes as very full and melodious. "Though badly wounded, it struck up a song, and continued it to almost its latest moments."—*Notes, &c.* p. 307.

* "The *Colibri* or humming-bird, known in Brazil only by the name of *Beija Flor* (kiss the flower), is the smallest bird existing. Their varieties have been stated at six or seven, but there are a great many more. Padre Cazal has seen ten different kinds. A European would never have supposed that a bird so small as the end of one's finger, could exist, furnished as it is with a bill, feathers, wings, and intestines, similar to the larger kind; and he would be naturally disposed to consider it as but a creature of imagination, until he visited its native country, and daily beheld it fluttering like a butterfly at every flower, and humming a gentle chirrup. It has long wings compared with the size of the body. The largest, of the size of a very small wren, are of an indigo colour, with a white spot upon the back. The second species differs from the first only in being smaller and not having a spot: both have a long tail much forked. The third kind and size are grey, and make their nests in inhabited houses, in the form of a little

"When the sun goes down, most of the animals retire to rest: only the slender deer, the shy pecari, the timid agouti, and the tapir, still graze around; the nasua and the opossum, and the cunning animals of the feline race, steal through the obscurity of the wood, watching for prey; till at last, the howling monkeys, the sloth with a cry as of one in distress, the croaking frogs, and the chirping grasshoppers with their monotonous note, conclude the day. The cries of the macuc, the capueira, and the goat-sucker (*caprimulgus*), and the bass tones of the bull-frogs, announce the approach of night. Millions of luminous beetles now begin to fly about like *ignes fatui*,

pocket, suspended from the point of a straw. The fourth variety are entirely green. The fifth are the same colour and size, with a white spot upon the breast. The sixth differs from the preceding only in having a very short tail. The seventh is of the same colour and size, with the tail yellow. The eighth is the colour of the nightingale, the breast finely speckled with white. The ninth is of a brilliant green, with the wings and tail dark, the beak short, slender, and yellow: all the others have it long, pointed, very delicate and straight, with the exception of the grey ones and those of the nightingale colour, who have it a little curved. The tenth kind is dark, or almost black, with a short tail of the colour of fire, the bill black and of medium length: when turned towards the spectator, the throat and breast exhibit at one instant various colours, according to the movements of the bird; at one time that of Aurora when most bright, or like gold melted in the crucible, followed, on a sudden, sometimes by a suffusion of green, at other times by blue, or by white, without ever losing its inimitable brilliancy. The head, which is black, appears ornamented with a little crest of the same colour, when the bird has its side towards the observer: when it presents the front, it appears studded with sparkling rubies, or all of a brilliant scarlet, which insensibly changes to refulgent yellow. They generally have the tongue very long, the legs exceedingly short, and the eyes black. Their principal aliment is the juice or honey of flowers, which they extract, not as the bee, but in the same manner as the butterfly. Some of them have the tongue cleft."—*Henderson's History of Brazil. Appendix*, pp. 509, 10.

and the blood-sucking bats hover like phantoms in the profound darkness of the night."*

Many of these inhabitants of the forests are much more interesting to the naturalist than welcome or pleasing company to the traveller. In Brazil, man has much less to fear from wild beasts than from reptiles, the species of which are almost innumerable, and the greater part are venomous. This, together with the plague of mosquitoes and other winged enemies, must be admitted to form some drawback on the beauty and luxurious temperature of the climate.† As the ground, however, becomes cleared, and

* Von Spix, vol. i. pp. 239—49.

† "The finest orange groves frequently fall a prey to the brown ants, which gnaw off the bark, or to the mole crickets, which devour the roots. The young mandiocca and sugar plantations are often invaded, stripped of their leaves, and laid waste by similar enemies in incredible numbers, or deprived of their roots by the wasps which live under ground. But even when the crop has happily reached maturity, the owner must share it with many foreign guests. Swarms of monkeys, flocks of parrots and other birds, attack the plantations; the paca, agouti, and other kinds of wild swine, eat up the leaves, stalks, and fruits; and myriads of ten-thredoes injure the crop. The planter himself, particularly if he has just arrived from Europe, and is unaccustomed to this climate, has many hard trials to undergo from tormenting animals. If he does not keep his dwelling closed, particularly in the morning, evening, and night, there are swarms of large and small mosquitoes which torment him with their stings, even through the thickest clothes; and only gauze or silk can secure him against these enemies. The earth-flies (*Pulex penetrans*) which are concealed in numbers in the sand, penetrate under the nails of the hands and feet, and by producing a blister filled with little eggs, cause the most painful sensations, which, if the sympathetic swelling of the inguinal glands is neglected, are often followed by mortification. The blister, as soon as it gives pain, must be carefully removed, and snuff rubbed into the wound. Besides these, the inhabitant has often other enemies in his house. The white-bellied ant (*cupim, termes fatale*), a great number of blattæ, and other vermin, continually oblige him, by their destructive fury, to make new arrangements. The former cause the most terrible devastation wherever they pass in their course; for, metals excepted, they

the marshy lands are drained, many of these tribes of annoyers will be gradually expelled or diminished. The primeval forests are continually giving way before the ax and the flames; and their various tenants will be compelled to seek regions yet more remote from the invasion of man. Although the beauty of the country will unquestionably be diminished by this means, the neighbourhood will become far more agreeable to the resident.

The luxuriant power of vegetation in these regions produces many singular appearances. When a trunk has a decayed hole or a crevice in it, arum, caladium, dracontium, and other productions of that kind, throw out large tufts of juicy, heart-shaped or arrow-shaped, dark-green leaves, so that the traveller beholds the most extraordinary intermixture of different species of vegetation.* "With such a fulness of life and such a vigorous striving at development," says Dr. V. Spix, "even so rich and fertile a soil is incapable of furnishing the necessary nourishment in sufficient abundance. Hence, the gigantic trees are in a constant struggle for their own preservation, and impede each other's growth still more than the trees in our forests.

gnaw through every thing; and in a few days, the beams of the house are rotten; the linen, books, and all the household furniture are destroyed. The blatta commits great destruction among the vegetables in particular, and, in the night, even attacks the tips of the fingers. Without are numberless enemies. Not to mention the savage ounce, the poisonous serpents, lizards, scorpions, centipedes, and spiders, which, fortunately, are not frequently met with, and wound a person only when provoked; the mite (*acarus*), called *carabatos*, is one of the most formidable plagues. These little animals, from the size of a poppy-seed to that of a linseed, live in societies, and crowded by hundreds in the grass and on dry leaves. As soon as the traveller touches such a plant, they very quickly penetrate through his clothes to the skin, where they eat in, particularly in the more tender parts, and cause an intolerable itching, which is increased by the inevitable rubbing, and in the end produces an inflamed blister."—*Von Spix's Travels*, vol. i. pp. 258–60.

* Maximilian's Travels, p. 50.

Even stems which have grown to a considerable height, requiring a large supply of nutriment, feel the influence of their more powerful neighbours, are suddenly arrested in their growth by being deprived of the requisite juices, and thus become in a short time subject to a rapid dissolution. We thus see the noblest trees, after suffering an atrophy of some months' duration, eaten away by ants and other insects, seized with decay from the root to the summit, till, to the terror of the solitary inhabitants of the forest, they fall down with a tremendous crash."* In some places, where the forests have been burnt down to clear the ground for cultivation, the immense scorched trunks appear like the ruins of colonnades, still in parts joined together by the withered stalks of their parasite plants. Sometimes, these creeping and climbing plants so interlace the larger trees, that it is impossible for the eye to penetrate the "verdant wall." Many of them bear flowers of great beauty; particularly one kind of bromelia with a deep coral-red flower, the leaves of which are tipped with violet, and the heliconia, a kind of banana, with dark red calyx and white flowers. The bauhinia is a very singular plant of this description: its strong woody branches grow in alternate arcs of circles, and the concavity of each is hollowed with so artificial an appearance, that it seems as if the chisel of a statuary had been employed for the purpose: on the convex side is a short, blunt thorn. It climbs into the tops of the highest trees, and might almost be mistaken for a production of art. Many of these creeping plants shoot downwards long branches, which taking root, impede the progress of the traveller, who must cut them down before he can proceed. Such pendent branches, when agitated by the wind, frequently inflict severe blows on the traveller. "In ge-

* Von Spix, vol. i. p. 243.

neral," says Prince Maximilian, "vegetation is so luxuriant in these climates, that every old tree we saw, presented a botanical garden of plants, often difficult to come at, and certainly for the most part unknown." "Even the rocks," remarks the same traveller, "are here covered with lichens and cryptogamous plants of a thousand various kinds; particularly the finest ferns, which in part hang like feathered ribbons in the most picturesque manner from the trees. A deep red horizontal fungus adorns the dry trunks; while a fine carmine-coloured lichen, (on the properties of which, as a dyeing matter, some experiments have been made in England,) covers the bark of the stronger trees with its round knobs."*

Mr. Luccock describes the various tints of a Brazilian forest as extending from a light yellow green, to one bordering on blue, and these are mingled again with red, brown, and a gradation of deeper shades almost to black. The "silver tree" is of a brilliant white; the head of the mangoa is brown. The Brazil-wood puts forth large flowers of a purple hue; and "I have seen," he says, "the vast mountain of Tengua clothed in yellow, from the multitude of its liburnums." The effect of the flowering parasitical plants, he compares to "gay parterres in the air."

The same traveller witnessed, in 1816, on a comparatively diminutive scale, one of those magnificent conflagrations which not unfrequently take place in these forest tracks, occasioned sometimes by lightning, sometimes by the carelessness of travellers. "Fire had seized upon an adjoining forest, and devoured about half a league square of it. Being to windward, and not incommoded by the smoke, I approached as near as the heat would allow me,

* Travels, p. 43.

or the embers suffer a well-broken horse to advance. It is not in my power, however, to communicate more than a very faint idea of the sublime picture. I was in the midst of several hundred stems, as large as the middle-sized British oak, all black and smoking, from whose smouldering remnants continually fell half-consumed branches, and smaller pieces of charred wood, which, broken and breaking others in their fall, formed a shower of sparks, rendered vivid by their passage through the air. The ground was covered with these charred arms, with embers, and with ashes, whence arose small spiracles of grey smoke, as if escaping through crevices from an immense furnace, hidden and burning beneath. At some little distance in front, the fire raged in all its fury. From the burning underwood, the flames rushed upwards in large sheets, which expired in the air, or seizing the dried leaves of those monarchs of the forest which had defied all former storms, instantly set the whole head in a blaze; and the crackling twigs formed a harsh counter to the surf-like roar of the flame below. While the fire spread itself, eating the forest all around, and became more active by every breeze, the remaining stumps in its immediate rear stood like piles of living coal, and seemed to writhe as under the influence of a liquid poison, creeping through their veins. The wintry appearance of those naked branches which preserved their station, and of the ground thickly strewed with ruins and black ashes, while flames surrounded me, and the heat of the atmosphere was almost intolerably oppressive, formed a contrast which cannot be described, an incongruous scene of desolation, which no art can represent." *

How this conflagration commenced, no one thought it worth while to inquire: it seemed to pass almost un-

* Luccock's Notes, &c. pp. 357, 8.

noticed, as it had not endangered any farm or plantation. In the year 1796, a conflagration broke out on the summit of the Tengua, which lasted for nine months, and was mistaken by some persons for a volcanic eruption. It was at length quenched by the rains. The spot, Mr. Luccock says, is still marked by the diminutive size of the trees, and the colour of the foliage. In proportion as any tract is cleared of wood, the birds of prey become less numerous, while the smaller kinds increase and multiply. In one instance, this traveller noticed great numbers of small birds "like the linnet and canary," * where the land had been partially brought under cultivation. The marshy meadows abound with the white heron, the American lapwing, and plovers and other water-fowl in abundance.† The shining violet oriole and the razor-billed blackbird are the familiar inhabitants of the fields and hedges.

The luxuriance and richness of the vegetable world in South America is ascribed by Humboldt to the great moisture which every where prevails, and which gives it an advantage over all other hot countries, forming more especially a surprising contrast to those parts of Africa

* The *Canario* has the form, and almost the same colour, but not the song, of the native of the Canary Islands: it is the first among the small birds that announces the dawn of day. The *Cardial* (Cardinal) resembles the linnet, but is a little larger. It derives its name from a small crimson cap, or hood, which covers part of the neck: its song is loud and pleasant.

† Mr. Luccock thus describes a species of heron, which he calls "the plumed Succoo." This shy but interesting bird is nearly as large as the common stork, white, with a yellow bill and legs: it is distinguished by a tuft of feathers, which grows from a membrane between the scapulars, and reaches the whole length of the back, resembling the bird of paradise. Mr. Henderson enumerates the *cegonha* or stork, "similar to that of Europe;" the *garca* or heron; the *tuyuyu*, "the height of a man," which also lives on fish; the scarlet *guara;* and the rose-coloured *colhereira*, a delicate and beautiful bird, the "king of the morasses."

which lie within the same parallels of latitude. In many respects, the climate, the soil, the varied surface, and the rich vegetation, seem to resemble more some parts of Asia Minor. But in that exuberance of evergreen foliage which forms the peculiar characteristic of the New Continent,—in the number of its finely wooded mountains, the sources of countless springs,—in the abundance of large streams, in the character even of its deserts, without sand, and the impenetrable forests,—the tropical region of Brazil has the pre-eminence over every other part of the globe.

After leaving the Mandioca estate, the caravan road to Minas Geraes ascends through the forest, by the edge of steep precipices and gloomy clefts, to the summit of the Serra de Estrella, about 4000 feet above the level of the sea, while the cones on each side rise nearly 2000 higher. There is an expensive paved road to the top of the mountain, nearly a mile in length, almost the only one of the kind in Brazil.* But at the end of this road there is no longer any possibility of using carriages on the rugged track. From the summit, there is a fine bird's-eye view of the bay, with its verdant islands, and the city in the back-ground; and the coast can be traced from Cape Frio to Point Joatinga, a distance of nearly a hundred and fifty miles. On the opposite side, there is a more limited view of a very uneven woody tract, which extends along the coast to the Rio Paraiba. The mountain road

* Mr. Luccock makes the whole ascent four miles and a half. The road is cut out of the side of the mountain, takes the line of a narrow, irregular defile, and is paved with large stones: the ascent in some places is very steep, but the angles are formed with judgement. "There is only one other work of the kind, I believe," says Mr. L. "in Brazil, which communicates between Santos and St. Paul's. Both of them do great credit to such an infant state."

first leads to Correго Seco, a poor village, 2260 Paris feet above the sea level. It then descends through a high undulating country, partly broken by massy granite mountains, to Itamarete, a lone house with a *venda*, on the banks of the Payabuna or Piabuna.* This mountain rivulet is here about 50 feet broad. About a day's journey from Correго Seco is Soumidouro, a small village in the midst of a forest, at the source of a mountain stream. From this place, where Dr. V. Spix passed a night, it is half a day's journey to the military post *(destacamento)* on the Paraiba, where all caravans coming from Minas Geraes, and the passports of all travellers going into the interior, are strictly examined. Mr. Luccock descended from Itamarete in a N.N.W. direction, passing several large farming establishments to the miserable *rancho* of Olaria, situated in a fine valley or mountain defile. Eight miles further is the *rancho* of Pegado. At

* "This is one of those resting-places which abound through the central part of Brazil, where there are frequented roads. The owner of a large estate builds what is called a *rancho*, which, in general, is nothing more than a long, broad roof, covered with tiles, and raised upon rough unhewn posts, about 20 feet high, but it has generally no walls whatever. Beneath these sheds, those who travel with a troop take up their residence for the night, and have no communication with the house or the owner of it. Just by, he establishes a *venda*, that he may be able to dispose of milk. For pasturage a small sum is paid to the owner of the land. At Itamarete, the *rancho* was 150 feet long by 30 broad."—*Luccock's Notes*, p. 375. Another, of a somewhat better description, at Pegado, was 60 yards long by 15. It had a mud wall at the back and at one end; the front and the other end were railed with horizontal bars to the height of five feet, and there were two good gates. The pillars, both in the centre and the sides, were of brick; the rafters, spars, and rails, of different-sized trunks of the cocoa tree. The whole was put together, according to the custom of the country, without the use of a nail, or peg, or iron in any shape, the want of these being supplied by notches and tenons. The floor, as usual, was the earth, not even levelled.

the distance of twenty-five miles from this place, the Piabuna, after having tumbled over a long succession of rapids, discharges itself into the Paraiba. The next stage is Pampulia, the most populous place in the road from Porto d'Estrella: it actually contained, in 1817, six or seven houses, all of them *vendas*. The road to it from Pegado ascends to an elevation of 1700 feet, crossing the summit of the Serro, and then descends into "a small vale, resembling one of the finest in Devonshire, dressed in Brazilian ornaments." The roads in this part are wider and well cut; the soil generally rich and deep. From Pampulia, Mr. Luccock was informed, it is a distance of twenty-five miles to Pao Grande, on the western road to the Paraiba, and about the same distance to Uva. To the eastward, it was stated, the country might be passed; but, beyond the district of Pampulia, the roads are bad, infested by Indians, and contain no established resting-place.

The route to Minas Geraes, which this traveller was pursuing, within four miles from Pampulia again ascends to a great height, and then winding from W. to N. and N.W., passes over gentle elevations of about 300 feet, the soil of the richest description, till, at Riberam, it enters on "a sort of Yorkshire-looking moor." Here reside a number of blacksmiths, who gain a living by making horse-shoes. The government very unwisely imposes a heavy duty on all unwrought iron that passes the Register further on. Shortly afterwards, the traveller passes the village of Pedro Moreiro, consisting of six or seven comfortless huts at the edge of the broad vale of the Paraiba; and then descends through a tract occupied by large sugar-plantations, to Governo, pleasantly situated at the junction of three small dells, each having its mountain torrent. He has not yet passed the limits of the parish of Inhu-

mirim, nor is a church to be met with in the whole distance from Piedade. About three miles from the river, the country opens into a charming vale, which reminded Mr. Luccock of the banks of the Tees near Barnard Castle. The stream is about two hundred yards broad. The ferry is reported to be fifteen miles from the mouth of the Piabuna, and about sixty from St. Salvador dos Campos: the country, as far as the falls of St. Fidelis, is composed of steep mountains and narrow dells. The Register here, though one of the first importance to the province and the state, is a contemptible building, without a stable, garden, or enclosure of any kind; and though a military station, no soldiers were to be seen. There are, besides, a *rancho* and a few mud huts. Upon a fine knoll on the other side of the river, stands a small chapel. A second Register must be passed on the banks of the Paraibuna, where, close to the water's edge, stand one good house, a small church, and a poor venda. The intermediate road is winding and difficult, and, though not above seventeen miles, forms a two days' journey. Within the distance of nine miles, the traveller has to ascend and descend six times, as much as 800 feet. The stream at the ferry is about 100 yards broad, and fifteen deep, with a sandy bottom.

The Paraiba is considered as one of the general boundary lines which divide the province of Rio from that of Minas Geraes; but Mr. Luccock states, that the provinces have usually for their boundaries, the *agoas vertentes*, (literally, descending waters,) or a line running between the heads of the streams which flow down on either side of the hills into their respective reservoirs. Thus, the small district which is washed by the Paraibuna and the Paraiba, and bounded by the Serro of Montequeira, belongs to the province of Rio Janeiro. Having

now reached the limit of the province in this direction, we return to the coast.*

At the northern extremity of the Bay, between the mouth of the Iriri and that of the Mageassu, in a recess formed by the *Morro* (Rock) of Piedade, stands a little town, which forms the port of a thickly inhabited and well cultivated region; it is a place of great resort. The town of Magé, situated on the river to which it gives name, about four miles from the Bay, is one of the most considerable places in the neighbourhood of the capital. It was erected into a town in 1789. In 1816, it had several streets regularly arranged, many houses of a superior cast, a good fish-market, and an excellent church. The exports were large. The black or best sort of ipecacuanha is procured here. The river, though broad, is navigable only by means of the tide, being shallow at low water.

RIO TO CANTA GALLO.

AFTER passing the mouth of the Iguapemirim, the next river is that which both Mr. Mawe and Mr. Henderson (the latter on the authority of Cazal) call the Macacu, but which Mr. Luccock styles the Iguapezu, remarking that the Macacu, one of its confluents, often usurps its name, though much smaller and shorter in its course. "In point of size, extent, and quantity of water, this is," he says, "without question, the first of the streams falling into the bay of Rio; although the Inhumirim has more traffic upon it, and on that account is certainly the most important. The mouth of the Iguapezu is

* A line drawn from S. to N., commencing at the fort of Lage, passing up the middle of the Bay and by the Inhumirim to the source of the Piabanha, and thence descending to the Paraïba, is considered as dividing the province into east and west.

nearly 600 yards broad. Before it lies a bar, which, amidst its common difficulties, has several channels, through which vessels of 30 tons burthen may pass, when light, at half-tide: if coming down laden, it sometimes obliges them to wait three or four days for a sufficient depth of water; and the people have not only to endure the irksomeness of delay, but the torment arising from the various and unceasing hostilities of insects. About a mile within the bar is a small *venda*, which, with a probable reference to such sufferings, is called Patiencia. A little eastward is Villa Nova (de St. Joze d'el Rey), once an abode of native Indians, and regulated by the laws made in their favour. The river continues broad and deep, where, about six miles from its mouth, and twenty-seven from the city, it is joined by the Kysarebu from the eastward, commonly called the Casarebu. Three miles higher we meet with the first solid ground, where is a fine plantation on the left of the river. Here the stream is much less deep, and narrowed to about a hundred yards. Soon after, we drop into shoal water, yet with a strong current. On the right is a round hillock, from the summit of which is an extensive prospect. In the immediate vicinity is a rich fenny tract, generally dry, but liable to be flooded; to the north the mountains, though distant, are in full view; to the east and south are unbounded plains, broken by the abrupt and grey *serros* of Tokai, America, and Saquarema. The channels of the Guaxendiba, the Casarebu, and the Macacu, may also be distinctly traced. The latter stream joins the Iguapezu (Guapiassu) from the north-east." *

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 347, 8. Mr. Henderson, speaking of this river under the name of Macacu, describes it as entering the bay by two mouths. "Alligators of a very large size inhabit its banks, and take shelter among the high reeds which grow in the water. Its source is in the Organ mountains, near the rock called Canu-

The town of Macacu, the seat of the local government, stands about two miles above the junction of the two streams in the midst of extensive marshes. It was thought by Mr. Luccock to contain, in 1816, a thousand inhabitants, with an unusual proportion of priests and lawyers. Its size and situation reminded him of Littleport in the Isle of Ely. Mr. Mawe describes it as standing on a small eminence in the midst of a fine plain, watered by a considerable stream, over which there are two good bridges. It has a church dedicated to S. Antonio, and a convent of "lazy Franciscans." It was created a town by King Peter II. in 1697. Since 1808, it has been the residence of a *juiz de fora*, whose jurisdiction also extends to the town of Mage. The population of Macacu, including its district, is stated by Mr. Henderson to amount to 9000 souls. He makes the distance from the Bay three leagues in a direct line, and almost ten by the course of the river. It is three leagues west of Mage, and two leagues N.E. of Villa Nova. About three miles S.E. of Macacu, upon the right bank of the Aldeia, not far from its confluence with the Guapiassu (or Macacu), is the Portos das Caixas, a place of great resort from the interior, and the grand point whence all the productions of the district of Tapacora and the surrounding parishes are embarked in boats for the capital. More sugar is said to be sent from hence, than from all the other ports in the Bay.*

dos; and it is united on its right margin by the rivers *Guapiassu*, Cabucu, and Varge; on its left by the Cacerebu and the Aldeia. The Guapiassu, which is the most considerable, comes from the same mountains as the Macacu, and a little before its incorporation with that river, communicates with it by a channel called Rio dos Morros (river of rocks). The principal confluent of this tributary river is Piracinunga."—*Henderson's Hist.* p. 40.

* Mr. Mawe, in his journey to Canta Gallo, entered what he calls the Macacu, proceeding up it to "a house called Villa Nova;" at day-break he reached Porto das Caixas, and thence was navigated in a canoe to Macacu.

Pursuing the river Macacu, about seven miles higher, and at the computed distance of fifty from the capital (travelling by the rivers), is Pirasenunga, where the traveller again enters on "the Piedmont" of the province. Mr. Luccock pursued the river of the same name four or five miles, till it diminished to a very narrow stream. Crossing to the west, he fell in with the Iguapemirim, running to S.E. to meet the Guapiassu. The whole of the way to Mage, distant about twelve miles, lies through a rich and well-cultivated plain.

Mr. Mawe, on leaving the town of Macacu, proceeded up the winding banks of the river to a farm belonging to a nunnery at Rio, distant only a day's journey from Portos das Caixas. The next day, crossing the stream where it was at least sixty yards broad and three feet deep, he proceeded in an easterly direction to the *fazenda* of a Captain Ferreira. This estate, bounded by the alpine ridge behind it, is the extreme point to which the Macacu is navigable. It is between six and seven leagues from the town of that name. About two miles from the fazenda, crossing the river twice, is the first Register in this direction, guarded by a corporal and private soldier. A second Register is the next resting-place, which Mr. Mawe reached after a difficult and dangerous journey. The badness of the road may be judged of from the fact, that he was nearly four hours in going six miles. "The imagination of Salvator Rosa himself," he says, "never pictured so rude a solitude. On one side rose the great barrier of mountains which we had yet to cross, covered to their summits with trees and underwood, without the smallest trace of cultivation; on the other lay the broken country between this ridge and the plain, presenting the same wild features of sylvan scenery. The miserable hut at which we lodged, partook of the savage character of the neighbourhood." Here the travellers were fortunate in

being supplied with coffee and eggs. "As to milk, there was no possibility of procuring any: a cow would have been considered here as an incumbrance; nor would any one of the six idle soldiers have given himself the trouble of milking her, though they had all been dying of hunger." The next day's journey was still more rugged and perilous, the road in some places traversing almost perpendicular passes, and forests which scarcely admitted the light of day. "Not a bird did we see," says Mr. Mawe, "nor the trace of any living thing, except some wild hogs." The elevation of the serro which he crossed, he supposed to be between 4 and 5000 feet above the level of the sea; the air was sharp and keen, and the thermometer (April) stood at 58°. The road continued in a N.E. direction to the *fazenda do Morro Queimado;* beyond which it began to descend the other side of the mountain ridge, through an uneven tract, formed of hills and ravines, which extended to Canta Gallo, the capital of the district, distant from Morro Queimado thirty-four miles.

"Canta Gallo," says Mr. Mawe, "though so near the seat of government, was not known until about twenty years ago.* It is situated in the midst of a fine well-wooded country, abounding in springs, and intersected by narrow valleys and ravines. The bottoms of some of these ravines formerly contained gold, which was accidentally discovered by some *grimpeiros*† from Minas Geraes, in the course of their searches about the great river Paraïba, and the Rio Pomba. The richness of these beds of gold, and

* Mr. Henderson states, that the first colony for working these mines was established in 1785.

† "A name given to those persons who go about the country seeking gold-washings, and do not give notice, or solicit a grant when they discover any. They are considered and treated as smugglers."

the fertility of the circumjacent country, attracted numbers of adventurers, who placed themselves under the direction of an able chieftain, named Mão de Luva, on account of his having lost one hand, and his wearing a stuffed glove in its place. The band soon amounted to two or three hundred persons, who washed every part in the neighbourhood worth washing, before they were discovered. Being very determined men, they lived free of control, and bade defiance to the laws. It was not until about three years after their first settlement, that the existing government was apprised of them; when, alarmed at the report of their numbers, which was doubtless exaggerated, they sent out spies to discover their rendezvous. This, after much time and great difficulty, was effected; the spies, in wandering through the solitary woods and fastnesses in the neighbourhood, were attracted toward the place by the crowing of a cock; hence the name of Canta Gallo, which was subsequently given to it. They introduced themselves as smugglers, who wished to belong to the fraternity, and after living there some time, found means to give information to government at Rio de Janeiro, who issued proclamations, offering pardon if the whole body would surrender. This measure was ineffectual; the *grimpeiros* were well provided with fire-arms, and determined to defend themselves as long as any gold could be found. In a year or two afterwards the washings began to fail, and thus the great bond of interest which united them being loosened, some deserted the place, and the rest became less vigilant in taking measures for their defence. The government seized this favourable opportunity for reducing them; a considerable force was assembled in the vicinity, with orders to make an attack at a certain fixed day, which was known to be celebrated by the *grimpeiros* as a festival in honour of some saint. At the expected time, while they were engaged at a great

banqueting, and too much occupied with their wine to think of their arms, which had been laid aside, (the flints having been secretly taken out,) about a hundred soldiers rushed in among them. Those who were sober enough flew to their arms, exclaiming, We are sold! we are betrayed! treason! treason! The contest was short; the soldiers seized the ringleaders, who were either sent to Africa or imprisoned for life: of the rest some were taken prisoners, others fled, but were pursued for years afterwards, and a few fell in the attack." *

The gold, however, had for the most part disappeared; and, at the period of Mr. Mawe's visit, scarcely sufficient was procured to pay the officers and soldiers appointed to receive it. The settlers had wisely turned their attention to agriculture, a far less precarious mode of subsistence.

The district of Canta Gallo is a territory of great fertility. It is watered by many streams which descend from the Organ mountains, its southern limit, and discharge themselves into the Paraïba, which separates it from Minas Geraes on the north. On the east, a continuation of the Organ range separates it from Goytacazes, and on the west, the Piabanha separates it from the district of Paraïba Nova. Among its rivers are the Pequequera, well stored with fish, and navigable for twelve miles; the Rio Negro, navigable for an equal distance, and also abounding with fish; the Bengalas; and one called Rio Grande. In 1814, the parish of Santissimo Sacramento was created a town, with the name of St. Pedro de Canta Gallo. Its government consists of two ordinary judges and three magistrates, with subordinate officers. The town is traversed by a current of good water, which falls into the Macacu. It is stated by Mr. Mawe to be about forty leagues distant from the capital.

* Mawe's Travels in the Interior of Brazil, 8vo. 1812, pp. 170-2.

The occasion of Mr. Mawe's visit to this place, was a report, brought to Rio, that a silver mine had been discovered in this district. The men who laid claim to the discovery, brought to the mint a quantity of earthy matter in powder, from which was smelted a small ingot of that metal. The report being laid before the Conde de Linhares, who was then prime minister, Mr. Mawe was solicited to investigate the business on the spot. During his stay at Canta Gallo, he made frequent excursions into the neighbourhood, in the course of which he obtained some information respecting the half-civilized aborigines of the district. They reside in the woods in a most miserable condition. Their dwellings are formed of boughs of trees, bent so as to hold a thatch or tiling of palm leaves; their beds are made of dry grass. Having little idea of planting or tillage, they depend for subsistence almost entirely on their bows and arrows, and on the roots and wild fruits which they find in the woods. A few among them can speak a little of the Portuguese language. The dress of the men consists of a waistcoat and a pair of drawers; that of the women, of a chemise and petticoat, with a handkerchief tied round the head, after the fashion of the Portuguese females. They bear the general characteristics of their race, the copper-coloured skin, short and round visage, broad nose, lank, black hair, and regular stature, inclining to the short and broad set. "Being desirous," says Mr. Mawe, "to see a proof of their skill and precision in shooting, of which I had heard much, I placed an orange at thirty yards' distance, which was pierced by an arrow from every one who drew his bow at it. I next pointed out a banana-tree, about eight inches in circumference, at a distance of forty yards: not a single arrow missed its aim, though they all shot at an elevated range. Interested by these proofs of their archery, I went with some of them into a wood, to see them shoot

at birds. Though there were very few, they discovered them far more quickly than I could; and cautiously creeping along until they were within bow-shot, never failed to bring down their game. The stillness and expedition with which they penetrated the thickets, and passed through the brush-wood, were truly surprising; nor could any thing have afforded me a more satisfactory idea of their peculiar way of life. Their bows are made of the tough fibrous wood of the *iriri*, six or seven feet long, and very stout; their arrows are full six feet long, and near an inch in diameter, pointed with a piece of cane cut to a feather edge, or with a bone, but of late more frequently with iron. They are loathsome in their persons, and, in their habits, but one remove from the Anthropophagi. A woman was gnawing at a half-roasted parrot, which was spiked on a stick, with the feathers scarcely burnt off and the entrails hanging out. They are not of a shy and morose character, but have a great aversion to labour, and cannot be brought to submit to any regular employment. Rarely is an Indian to be found serving as a domestic, or working for hire, and to this circumstance may be ascribed the low state of agriculture in the district; for as the farmers, when they begin the world, have seldom funds sufficient to purchase negroes at Rio, their operations are for a long time very confined, and frequently languish for want of hands." *

About fifteen miles north-east of Canta Gallo, crossing the Rio Negro, is a place called Santa Rita, where a considerable quantity of gold has been obtained by washing the soil. The operations are carried on in a deep ravine, bounded at one extremity by an abrupt hill, the other end opening on an extensive plain. The soil appeared to Mr. Mawe extremely rich, being clothed with luxuriant

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 174—6.

verdure, and the hills on each side were covered with trees. The stratum of *cascalhâo* (gravel with rounded pebbles) in which the gold is found, lies under a bed of soil four or five feet deep, and varies from two feet to seven or eight inches in thickness. The soil being removed, the *cascalhâo* is dug out, and conveyed with great care to the nearest place where there is water, to be there washed by the negroes. Near Santa Rita, Mr. Mawe discovered a considerable quantity of lime-stone, of which the mountains in this neighbourhood appear to consist. He presented some of it to the proprietor of the gold works, who was astonished to hear of such a production as *stone* lime, the lime that was used in this part of the country being made of sea-shells; nor could he be convinced of the fact, till Mr. Mawe proved it by burning what he had produced.

On his return to Canta Gallo, Mr. Mawe was conducted by a guide to the pretended silver mine. It was a laborious journey, and, for the last six miles, they were obliged to dismount, the mountains over which the road lay being impassable by mules.* They had to ford rivulets, and force their way through thickets; and at length, he had the mortification to find that the story was a fabrication, and that no such mine existed. The silver that had been exhibited at Rio, is supposed to have been an old buckle or spoon, filed down and mixed with some pulverized earthy substance. Impositions of this kind, it is stated, are not uncommon.

The Indian corn grown in this district, is ground by a horizontal water-wheel, on the upper end of which is fixed the mill-stone; and so great is the velocity given to it by the rush of water brought to bear on it, that it makes from fifty to sixty revolutions in a minute. They have

* The second day, he crossed the Rio Grande of this district, where it formed a stream "as large as the Derwent at Derby."

likewise a mode of pounding the corn into flour, by a machine called a *sloth*. "Near a current of water, a large wooden mortar is placed, the pestle of which is mortised into the end of a lever twenty-five or thirty feet long, resting upon a fulcrum at five-eighths of its length: the extremity of the shorter arm of this beam is scooped out, so as to receive a sufficient weight of water to raise the other end, to which appends the pestle, and to discharge itself when it has sunk to a given point. The alternate emptying and filling of this cavity cause the elevation and fall of the pestle, which take place about four times per minute. This contrivance," adds Mr. Mawe, "surpasses all others in simplicity; and in a place where the waste of water is of no consequence, it completely answers its purpose."

On his return to Rio, Mr. Mawe solicited permission to visit the diamond mines of Serro do Frio,—a favour which had never hitherto been granted to any foreigner; but, through the friendship of the Conde de Linhares, his application was successful. While preparing for this expedition, (an account of which will be given in our survey of the province of Minas Geraes,) an occurrence took place, which procured for him as a mineralogist considerable celebrity, and was the occasion of his being introduced within the walls of the treasury. The circumstances were these. A free negro of Villa do Principe, about nine hundred miles distant, addressed a letter to the prince regent (now King John VI.), announcing that he possessed an amazingly large diamond, which he had received from a deceased friend some years before, and which he begged he might have the honour to present to his royal highness in person. As the magnitude which this poor fellow ascribed to his diamond, was such as to raise imagination to its highest pitch, an order was immediately despatched to the commander of Villa do Principe, to

send him forthwith to Rio. He was accommodated with a conveyance, and escorted by two soldiers. As he passed along the road, all who had heard the report congratulated him on his brilliant good fortune; the soldiers also anticipated promotion; and all persons envied the fortunate negro. At length, after a journey of twenty-eight days, he arrived at the capital, and was conducted to the palace. On being admitted into the presence-chamber, he threw himself at the prince's feet, and delivered his wonderful gem. His highness was astonished at its magnitude; a pause ensued; the attendants waited to hear the prince's opinion. A round diamond, nearly a pound in weight, filled them all with wonder. Some ready calculators reckoned the millions it was worth; others found it difficult to numerate the sum at which it would be valued; but the general opinion of his highness's servants was, that the treasury was many millions of crowns the richer. The occurrence became the general topic of remark. When the stone was shewn to the ministers, an apprehension, and even a doubt was expressed, that a substance so large and round might not prove to be a real diamond; they, however, sent it to the treasury under a strong guard, and it was lodged in the jewel room.

On the next day, the Conde de Linhares sent for Mr. Mawe, and requested him to give his opinion respecting this famous jewel, stating that he had his doubts about its proving a genuine diamond. At the hour appointed, being furnished with the necessary joint order from all the ministers, he repaired to the treasury, and was shewn through several splendid apartments hung with scarlet and gold, to an inner room, in which were several strong chests with three locks each, the keys of which were kept by three different officers, who were all required to be present at the opening. One of these chests being unlocked, an elegant little cabinet was taken out, from which

the treasurer took the gem, and in great form presented it to Mr. Mawe. Before he touched it, he was convinced that it was only a rounded piece of crystal. It was above two inches in diameter. To convince the parties present that it was not a diamond, Mr. M. produced a real one, with which he cut a deep nick in the stone. This was proof positive; a certificate was accordingly made out, stating that it was an inferior substance of little value, which was signed by Mr. Mawe. Other boxes were now unlocked, from one of which were taken two large slabs of diamond, each a full inch in length, and about the eighth of an inch in thickness, but of a very bad brown colour. When found, they formed one entire piece, which, being amorphous, was not known to be a diamond, until the chief of the working party had had recourse to the common experiment of placing it on a hard stone, and striking it with a hammer. If the substance resist the blow, or separate in *laminæ*, it must be a diamond. The latter was the case in the present instance, and the man having thus made two diamonds from one, at the expense of the value of the whole, transmitted them to the intendant. *

The remaining diamonds in the treasury appeared to be in quantity about four or five thousand carats. Few of them, however, were large, except one of an octahedral form, which weighed full seventeen carats. Among the few coloured diamonds, one of the smallest was of a beautiful pink, one of a fine blue, and several of a green tinge; the yellow were the most common, and the least esteemed.

* The river Abaité, whence these were obtained, has produced one of an octahedral form, which weighs seven-eighths of an ounce troy, and is supposed to be one of the largest diamonds in the world. It was found about twelve years before Mr. Mawe's visit, by three men who were under sentence of banishment. On presenting this valuable gem to the then viceroy, they were pardoned and rewarded.

The poor negro, chagrined and disgraced, had to find his way home as he could.

A flat coast extends from the mouth of the Guapiassu, to the broad, shallow mouth of the Guaxendiba. This river, which rises in the hills of Taypu, is stated by Mrs. Graham to have a course of only five miles in a straight line, but its windings measure above twenty: it is navigable, and its banks are astonishingly fertile. About four miles up, on its left bank, is the village of St. Gonzales; and on the opposite side, a road conducts by the edge of marshy ground to St. Joâo da Tapacora, a small Indian village, and the nearest place to the capital (Mr. Luccock states) where the native language is in use, though in a corrupted state. * Near the mouth of this river stand the church and fazenda of Nossa Senhora da Luz, described by Mrs. Graham in very glowing language. It is about twelve miles from Rio. From the varanda of the proprietor's house, there is a picturesque view of the bay, dotted with rocky islands, one of which, called Itaoca, is said to be held in reverence by the Indians as the abode of their supposed divine benefactor Zome, who taught them the use of the mandioc. † "But," adds this tra-

* The appellation of Tapacora is given, according to Mr. Henderson, to the parish of St. Joâo d' Itaborahy, near the right bank of the river Varge. This is probably the same that Mr. Luccock refers to.

† Paye Tzome, or Tome, to whom this legend refers, is represented as an elderly man, who wore white clothing, and bore only a staff: he came from the country of the *Guaranies*, that is, the people of the East; and when the Jesuits received from the people the first accounts of him, they were unable to enumerate the moons which had elapsed since he left them, but said, it was before the days of their grandfathers; and one person was then living (1550), about 130 years old. He is said to have resided a considerable time at Cabo Frio and in its neighbourhood, till, having received some insult, he went towards the north, and was heard of no more. Wherever he came, he taught the people to clothe themselves, to

veller, "though nature is at least as fine here as in India or in Italy, the want of some reference to man as an intellectual and moral being, robs it of half its charms." The proprietor of this estate represented the creole negroes and mulattoes as far superior in industry to the Portuguese and Brazilians: they are the best artificers and artists; all decorative painting, carving, and inlaying, are done by them; in short, they excel in all the mechanical arts, and at least one third of the orchestra of the opera-house is composed of mulattoes. A mulatto slave on this estate became attached, in his youth, to a creole negress, born, like him, on the estate; but he did not marry her till he had earned money enough to purchase her, in order that their children, if they had any, might be born free. Since that time, he had become rich enough to purchase himself, but his master was unwilling to sell him his freedom, afraid of losing his services. "Unfortunately, these persons have no children; therefore, on their death, their property, now considerable, will revert to the master. Had they children, as the woman is free, they might inherit the mother's property; and there is nothing to prevent the father's making over all he earns to her." *

RIO TO CAMPOS AND ST. FIDELIS.

IMMEDIATELY behind the village of Praya Grande, towards the east, rises the mountainous district of St. João

live in houses, and to cultivate mandioc. The Jesuits taught them to believe that this personage was no other than St. Thomas the Apostle, whom tradition reports to have preached the gospel in Persia, India, and China. The *Tamoyo* Indians of this province have been supposed to derive their name from their benefactor; *Tzomeos* being softened by the French into Tomoyos. It is more probable, that they were named from the district they inhabited, which formed the old *capitania* of St. Thome.

* Journal of a Voyage to Brazil. By Maria Graham, p. 198.

do Carai, comprising about twelve miles every way. It is traversed by three roads, of which the most southerly passes over lofty rocks and through thick woods, commanding views which compensate for the difficulties of the route. Another road passes to the north of Praya Grande, and then turns to the right, to the *fazenda* of Barraca, where are a good house and chapel, and fine plantations. From hence, it rises to high, undulating ground, and, after passing some minor establishments, proceeds down a steep, winding, romantic road, to the great *fazenda* of Tokai, situated in a fine plain not much above the sea-level, and watered by a stream that falls into the Atlantic a little east of the Marica islands, "better known by the easily-understood name of *Contrabandistas*." Here, the mountains are separated from each other by a wide expanse of swampy land, and look as if they had once been rocky islands. The intervals are filled with sea-sand, and water lodges in them.* Nearer the sea are broad meadows, and within them a range of shallow lakes, which afford subsistence to great numbers of water-fowls. About nine miles from Tokai, and upwards of twenty from Rio, is a spot said to have been formerly the entrance to a harbour, where the waters of the large lake of Marica (or America), when swollen by rain, open themselves a vent. On the cessation of the rains, the waters of the lake sink to their usual level, and the tide again shuts up the aperture, so that, in a short time, a dry and secure road is formed across the bar, though it never rises to the height of the natural ridge with which it is connected at each end. Beyond this spot succeed the plains lying between the lake of Marica and the elevated *restinga*, or bank, which bars the sea,

* Mr. Luccock styles this "the Cambridgeshire of Rio."

from the mountains of Carai to the lofty point of Ponta Negra.

A third route from Praya Grande conducts along the beach, and then stretches inward, through a well-cultivated track, to the village of St. Gonzales. This route was taken, in 1815, by Prince Maximilian of Wied Neuwied, in exploring the eastern coast. St. Gonzales is well situated on rising ground, close to the northern vĕrge of the mountains of Carai. It contained, in 1815, a church and about two hundred houses, "the greater part of them belonging," Mr. Luccock states, "to people from the Azores, or their descendants, who, though generally residing on their farms, resort hither on religious festivals. They are remarkably civilized and orderly, so as to render this one of the pleasantest abodes in the country." After leaving St. Gonzales, the country gently declines to the rich plains of the Guaxendiba,* which, draining the mountains of Carai, pours its pellucid stream through a narrow, rocky channel. Near the river is a solitary *venda*. A well-cleared, fertile, and populous region then presents itself, succeeded by virgin woods and swampy plains, extending to the banks of the Itapitiu, near the mouth of which is situated the little town of Santa Maria de Marica; so named from the lake on which it borders. This is the seat of a civil jurisdiction, being created a town in May 1814. The church, dedicated to our Lady of Amparo, is the best in the province, with the exception of some in the metropolis. It contained, in 1817, a few unpaved streets of low but neatly whitened houses: the population of the parish is stated at about 800. It is twenty-five miles E. of Rio, and nearly thirty W. of Cape Frio.

Prince Maximilian describes the road to Marica as

* Written by Prince Maximilian, *Guajintibo*.

passing over the serra de Inua, "an arm projecting into the sea from the lofty mountainous chain which runs parallel with the coast." Thick, gigantic forests cover the acclivity, full of monkeys, parrots, and other Brazilian game. In particular, a small red-and-gold-coloured monkey (*simia rosalia*) was seen here, called the red *sahui*, or *marikina*, which is not found further north. "Good Brazilian hunters," remarks his highness, "possess a wonderful talent for exploring these forests: their bodies being inured to fatigue, and the custom of always going barefoot, give them a great superiority in this employment. Their dress consists of a light shirt and cotton drawers. They often have a cloth jacket hanging over their shoulders, which they put on when it rains, or in the cool nights. The head is covered with a felt or straw hat. A leather belt, passing over the shoulder, holds the powder-horn and shot-bag, while the lock of the long fowling-piece is generally secured by the skin of some animal." *

About four miles from Marica,† the traveller arrives at the lake of that name, which is stated to be nearly eight miles long, in some places not above two in breadth, and about six leagues in circumference. The bottom, Mr. Luccock says, is a hard sand, with patches of mud; the

* See plate.

† Mr. Luccock writes it *America*, but derives it, at the same time, from the Tupi word *Marica*, which signifies "any hollow thing:" thus, it is most frequently applied to the dried shell of the gourd, or the fruit of the passion-flower which has not been broken, and in which the seeds rattle; and he supposes that the natives would naturally transfer it to a decked vessel. It is also given by the Indians to their idols. "Is it certain," he asks, "that Vespucius brought hither with him the name of *Americus*, and that he did not adopt it as an honourable and appropriate distinction, as Scipio received the addition of Africanus?"—He supposes that the Tupi word was first adopted as the appellation of the new country.

banks are low and marshy, or sandy; and it abounds with fish, while its shores are peopled by gulls, cormorants, lapwings, plovers, and other water-fowl. The fishery is a government monopoly.

Ponta Negra, a bold, bluff point towards the sea, is the abutment of a primitive *serro*, having on each side a sandy plain. On the northern slope of a hill which terminates the low tongue of land beyond this point, is the parish of Our Lady of Nazareth of Sequerema, consisting of a church, about fifty houses, and as many scattered huts, inhabited chiefly by fishermen. The salt lake of Sequerema is stated by Mr. Henderson to be six miles long from east to west, by three in breadth at the widest part. Prince Maximilian makes it about six *leagues* in length by one in breadth. Like that of Marica, it has a bottom of hard sand, and is not above three feet deep in most places. During the rainy season, it inundates the country, and opens for itself a rough, shallow channel to the sea. The river Tinguy, which runs into its most northern bay, is the principal one that flows into it. Beyond this is the still larger salt lake of Araruama (or Iruama), stated to be twenty miles long by eight in breadth, but with still less propriety termed a lake, as it communicates with the sea, a league and a half to the N. of Cape Frio, by a channel fifty yards in width at the mouth. In some places, it is several fathoms in depth; in others, quite shallow. It receives the Francisco Leite, the Mataruna, or Rio do Ponte, and several smaller streams; and, like the other lakes along this line of coast, abounds with fish. Its name is stated to be derived from the notorious offensiveness of its waters, arising from an accumulation of mud and putrid shell-fish.* On

* Between the lakes Marica and Sequerema, Mr. Henderson places the Jacuné, stated to be nearly three miles in length; be-

its northern shore is the Indian village of St. Pedro, founded by the Jesuits, consisting of a large church and a collection of mud huts seated on a small eminence.* The inhabitants are almost exclusively Indians, there being only a few Portuguese besides the priest. They have a titular *capitam mor* of their own nation. They are described as having still more strongly marked the genuine physiognomy of their race, as observed in the Indians of St. Lorenzo. "Their dress and language are those of the lower classes of Portuguese, and they are but partially acquainted with their ancient tongue. They have the vanity to pretend to be Portuguese, and look down with contempt on their still uncivilized brethren in the woods, whom they call *caboclos*, or *tapuyas*. Their women fasten their long, coal-black hair in a knot at the top of the head, like the Portuguese females. In the corners of their huts hangs the net, or hammock, in which the family sleep." They retain the Indian character—indisposition to labour, cunning, inflexible pride, and a

tween the Sequerema and the Araruama, that of Jacarépua, about two miles in length; and, near the western extremity of the Araruama, the lake Vermelha, also about two miles long, and, though not communicating with the sea, saline. Besides these, he mentions the lake Boicaca, which is, in fact, the mouth of a river of that name, and that of Juthurnuahibi.

* From Sequerema, Prince Maximilian proceeded, the first day, to Pitanga, "formerly a convent, as appears from the old church," now an extensive fazenda. The next night, they lodged at the fazenda of Tiririca, where are extensive sugar-works. Three leagues further is Parati, another fazenda, which has also been a convent, and has "a considerable new church." The fourth day, they reached the *venda* of St. Pedro. Most of the principal fazendas have a church, or a large apartment fitted up as a chapel, where mass is read on Sundays and holidays. "Travellers," says P. Maximilian, "would do well not to neglect to attend mass, because the inhabitants think much more highly of them for so doing. They treated us with kindness and attention when we observed this rule, and shewed evident coldness when we did not go to church."

strong prepossession in favour of their woods. They attend mass, but shew little regard in other respects for their priest.—The great forests of St. Pedro are full of the finest timber, and the Brazil-wood abounds here.

About two leagues distant, crossing the lake, is the town or "city" of Cabo Frio,* situated on the southern bank of the strait which unites the waters of the lake Araruama with the ocean, on the northern side of the well-known promontory from which it takes its name. This was one of the first settlements made on this part of the coast. The town is divided into two parts by an interval of half a mile. The principal portion has a church dedicated to Our Lady of Assumption, a hermitage of St. Bento (Benedict), and a Franciscan monastery. The chapel of Our Lady of Cuia crowns the summit of a rock. The smaller portion of the city, called Passagem, defended by fort St. Matthæus, has another Benedictine hermitage. Here is a *juiz de fora*, whose jurisdiction extends to the town of Maccahé. This "city" is stated also by Mr. Henderson to have "royal masters" (regius professors, we presume) of Latin. Fish is the common diet, and, with farinha and sugar, the chief article of exportation. A sort of marsh fever is said to be prevalent here, the whole neighbourhood being intersected with lakes and marshes. "Though small and badly paved," says Prince Maximilian, "the town contains several houses of a very neat and pretty appearance."

Beyond Cape Frio, the line of coast assumes a more northerly direction to the little town of Barra de S. Joâo, situated on a sandy tongue of land between the river of

* This town, or rather village, is stated to have assumed, like many other places, the title of city, when, in 1615, it came into the possession of the Portuguese, on the expulsion of the Dutch pirates who had established themselves here for the purpose of exporting dye-wood.—*Henderson's Brazil*, p. 102.

that name and the sea. The route passes the spacious fazenda of Campos Novos, which has a church built by the Jesuits; and from this place to the river Joâo, a distance of four leagues, extends almost uninterruptedly a magnificent, primeval forest. The river, where crossed by Prince Maximilian in a canoe, is from three to four hundred yards broad, "in some measure navigable," and five or six brigs were found anchored here.* "An Englishman who is settled here, by trade a smith, told us," says his highness, "that English vessels had already found their way to this solitary spot, and that he should therefore solicit the appointment of vice-consul. We gave him a number of fowling-pieces to repair, and the consul in expectancy performed his business to our entire satisfaction." Two leagues further, a clear rivulet, called Rio das Ostras, falls into the ocean. About seven leagues to the north-east of the river St. Joâo, the Maccahé discharges itself in front of the islands of St. Anna, dividing the district of

* Mr. Luccock, either crossing nearer its mouth, or, perhaps, when it was swelled by a high tide, (for it was at the time covered with foam,) found it a mile and a half broad. This river, according to Mr. Henderson's authorities, rises in the skirts of the serro of Canudos, with the name of *Aguas Claras* (clear water), affords navigation for upwards of ten leagues, running among woods and mountains, and after bathing the southern skirts of the mountain of its name, disembogues about seven leagues S. W. of the Maccahé. Large quantities of timber are exported by it. Mr. Luccock afterwards ascended it, in a canoe, nearly twenty-eight miles, at which spot it is about 400 yards wide, with low, muddy banks, and not more than 15 miles in a direct line, he imagined, from the place of embarkation. It is sufficiently deep, through its whole course, for vessels of seventy tons burden, and when the bar shall be cleared and the country improved, will become a commercial medium of great consequence. At the point to which Mr. Luccock ascended it, it receives the Rio Dourado, up which he advanced four miles through a thickly wooded country, and it might easily be made navigable, he thinks, for seven miles from its confluence with the St. Joâo.

Cape Frio from Goytacazes.* The little town of S. Joâo de Maccahé lies scattered among thickets on the banks of this river. It contained, in 1816, about a hundred and fifty houses, for the most part small and of a single story, built of clay, with upright wooden posts, and neatly whitewashed. On a rising ground, where stand the church of Santa Anna and the flag-staff, there are a few houses of superior pretensions. It was created a town in 1814. The inhabitants are chiefly fishermen, but export a great deal of timber and some produce from the plantations. Up the river, in the interior, the Gorulhos (or Guarulhos) Indians are said to have several villages. The mouth of the harbour is now not more than 70 yards broad, and unfit for the entrance of vessels of more than 200 tons burden.†

The traveller has now entered on the extensive plains of the Goytacazes, which extend to the Paraïba, an uninteresting and depopulated tract of country, abounding with extensive marshes and *lagoas* (lakes) overgrown with reeds, in which oxen and horses, often in great numbers, are seen wading up to their bellies. "This extensive and level wilderness is inhabited by herds of oxen who

* The Maccahé rises in the Organ range, and has a course of fifteen leagues, ten of which are navigable. About three leagues from its embouchure, it is joined by the St. Pedro from the Serra Frade.

† Between the St. Joâo and the Maccahé, in Mr. Luccock's map, is the bay of St. Ann, which he describes as deep and spacious, but subject in rough weather to a violent surf. To the southward is a shingly shore, which, when it meets the high rocks beyond the river Una, becomes bold, and stretching to the eastward, forms the point of Buzios, called in the English charts Cowrie's Point. "Near the mouth of the Una lies the small secure bay of Armazem, affording a refuge to vessels baffled in their attempts to double the Cape, and when the wind blows hard from the east. The entrance is between two small rocky islands, called, from their different appearance, the beautiful and the ugly."

range at liberty to the distance of even twenty or twenty-five miles from all human habitations. Once or twice a-year, they are driven together by their owners, the proprietors of the neighbouring fazendas, into a *coral*, or place surrounded by palisades, where they are counted and marked. If any person approaches these animals, they raise their heads, snuff the air, and gallop away with tail erect. "It is certainly remarkable," adds Prince Maximilian, "how, by the extraordinary activity and care of the Europeans, this useful species of animal is already spread over the greatest part of the globe. In the north, the ox feeds in the frozen forests of birch; in the temperate zone, in our pleasant grassy vales, between shady woods of beech; between the tropics, under palms and bananas; and in the islands of the South Sea, beneath *melaleucas*, *metrosideros*, and *casuarinas*. This animal, indispensable to civilized man, every where thrives, and increases his wealth and prosperity." *

The largest of the lakes which stretch along this part of the coast, is the *Lagoa Feia*, the Ugly Lake, so called from its appearance: it consists of two parts connected by a canal, the northern part nearly 20 miles long from east to west by upwards of twelve in width, the southern, sixteen miles in length by only two in width. It is so shallow, that canoes can proceed only by certain channels, and so subject to be agitated by the wind, that it is frequently dangerous for them. It abounds in fish, and the waters are sweet and wholesome. In rainy seasons, it annually opens for itself an outlet at a place called *Barra do Furado*, when it presents the appearance of a furious river: when the waters are low, the *barra* is dry. The whole district might, Mr. Henderson thinks, be drained by hydraulic machinery, as the Lincolnshire fens have

* Maximilian's Travels, p. 91.

been, when the grounds would afford excellent pasturage, and become susceptible of cultivation at all times. "The fine campos or plains of this district," he says, "would certainly become the elysium of Brazil, if its territory, rich in soil, were divided into certain portions, and delivered to a people animated with a spirit of agricultural improvement. But, unhappily, the greater part of these lands are in the hands of three proprietors,—the Benedictine monastery of Rio de Janeiro, the purchaser of the ex-Jesuitical possessions, and a "titular," the Bishop of Rio. Mr. Luccock, who is somewhat fond of such geographical comparisons, styles the tract between Lake Feia and the Paraïba, the *Delta* of the river, which, he says, in several points resembles the Nile, as that lake does Lake Mareotis. The climate, according to the information he received, is hot and unhealthy, but there can be no doubt that it might be rendered much more salubrious. It contained in 1801, according to Cazal, 280 sugar-mills, chiefly on the higher grounds; and since that period, they have rapidly increased. Mr. Luccock remarks, that, with a high-sounding extent of estates, the inhabitants sacrifice the whole to a passion for sugar and rum.*

Prince Maximilian and his companions passed a night at the Abbey of St. Bento, which stands in the midst of these verdant plains. "The edifice is large, has a handsome church, two courts, and a small garden. In one of the courts were lofty cocoa-palms, loaded with fruit. The convent possesses fifty slaves, who have built their huts near it in a large square. There are besides, a sugar refinery (*engenho*), and several farm-buildings. This rich convent possesses also great numbers of horses and oxen, and several *corals* and *fazendas* in the adjacent country:

* The Campos sugars, as they are termed, are esteemed the best in Brazil.

it even receives tithes of sugar from several estates in the neighbourhood." Beyond this spot, the country becomes more populous; habitations and fazendas present themselves in close succession, and vendas are found all along the road to the town of St. Salvador.

St. Salvador dos Campos, commonly called Campos, is a tolerably well-built, populous, and flourishing town, with regular streets, for the most part paved, and neat houses, some of several stories. Balconies, closed with wooden lattices, in the old Portuguese fashion, were common at the time of Prince Maximilian's visit. Not far from the river Paraïba, on which the town stands, is a square where are the court-house and prison. Justice is administered by a *juiz de fora*. There are seven churches,* five apothecaries' shops, and a hospital; and "it is said," adds his highness of Wied Neuwied, "that there are in this part of the country medical men of much greater skill than in the other districts of the coast, where practitioners worthy of confidence may often be sought in vain." The number of inhabitants, he states at between 4 and 5000, and the population of the whole district of Goytacazes at 24,000 souls. A recent census, however, according to Mr. Henderson, makes the population of the town amount to 1150 families, which would give a higher estimate. The town is very agreeably situated, extending along the south bank of "the beautiful Paraïba," about eighteen miles from its mouth, or thirty (Mr. Luccock says) by water, and four miles below the mouth of the little river Muriahé, which falls into it. Among the in-

* Most of these churches belong to conventual establishments. Mr. Henderson enumerates, "besides the mother church, a house of misericordia, three hermitages dedicated to Our Lady of Rosaria, (of) Boa Morta, and (of) Lapa, two Terceira orders of St. Francisco and St. Carmo, and an hospital." Here, too, as at Cabo Frio, are "royal professors of the primitive letters and Latin."

habitants there are many opulent persons, proprietors of the sugar refineries near the river. Coffee and cotton here thrive extremely well, and even European vegetables are met with in the markets. An active trade is carried on, chiefly, however, in sugar and brandy. In the town, a considerable degree of luxury prevails, and, if Prince Maximilian may be credited, of cleanliness and neatness. About two miles from the mouth of the river, in front of a small island, is the village of St. Joam da Barra, containing about 1500 inhabitants, chiefly fishermen and mariners: it forms the port to Campos, whence all the produce is shipped in coasting-vessels for the capital.

The district of Goytacazes extends about fifteen miles further north, having for its boundary, according to the Brazilian geographer followed by Mr. Henderson, the river Camapuan, Cabapuan, or Capabuanna, which has its source in the serra of Pico, not far from that of the Muriahé, and running between the mountains, enters the Atlantic fifteen miles north of the Paraïba. Its right name, Prince Maximilian states to be Itabapuana.* The great fazenda of Muribecca, which stands in the middle of the verdant plains stretching between the two rivers, formerly belonged, together with a tract nine leagues in length, to the Jesuits: it is now the property of four individuals. The whole district of Goytacazes, comprising 28 leagues of coast, originally formed the *capitania* of St. Thomé, so denominated from the contiguous cape. The first donatory was Pedro de Goes, who established himself on the banks of the Paraïba, where he lived in amity with the Indians two years; but, after that period, a war broke out between the colonies and the natives,

* To the above variations of orthography may be added, Comapuam and Campapoana. Mr. Henderson, following the Coragrafia Brasilica, says, "the Indians call it Reritigba;" but P. Maximilian states, that this is an error, Reritigba being the name applied to the Beneventé.

which lasted five years, and terminated in the abandonment of the colony. The country then remained in the possession of the three nations of Puries, Guarues, and Goytacazes, till, about 1580, they were driven by the governor of Rio beyond the mountains. About a hundred years after, the territory was granted by Peter II. to Viscount D'Asseca; but complaints being made of maladministration, it was finally, in 1752, incorporated with the crown lands, and is now included in the province of Rio. At the time of the expulsion of the aboriginal inhabitants, towards the close of the sixteenth century,* the Jesuits took possession of the territory south of the Paraïba on behalf of the Indians, and obtained for those who should return some special privileges. One of the most important was, a right to choose their own village magistrates, who were to act jointly with those appointed by the viceroy. "A conservatorial court was established, to watch over the interests of the people; and their lands were apportioned to those who wished to occupy them, but never sold: the fixed rent was about two-pence for every six feet in front. The rent was appropriated to the use of the Indians, and properly administered, I believe," says Mr. Luccock, "so long as the order of Jesuits existed. Forms then established, though gradually falling into disuse, are not yet quite obsolete. All estates now sold, which once made a part of this district, must be furnished with what is called an Indian title; the sale must be ratified by the conservatorial court, and the lands remain charged with a sort of quit-rent. One set of these titles which I have seen, goes as far back as the year 1623. There are still several villages, which are acknowledged to retain the privilege of electing a native magistrate as a

* Under the name of Tamoyos and Tupinambas, mention has been made of them in the historical sketch, as the allies of the French; and they shared in their expulsion from the province.—See p. 26.

sort of coadjutor to their foreign governor, and one or two of them exercise this right." *

The savage and warlike tribe who inhabited the district which still bears their name, are described by the Jesuit Anchieta as the most inhuman on the whole coast. They were of gigantic stature, possessed great strength, were skilled in the management of the bow, and were enemies to all other nations. Contrary to the custom of the other Indian tribes, they suffered their hair to grow long and hang down, and were distinguished by a lighter colour, more robust make, and greater ferocity. They were divided into three hostile tribes, the *Goaytaca Assú*, *Goaytaca Jacorito*, and *Goaytaca Mopi*. They are said to have also borne the name of *Uctacas*, and are reckoned by Vasconcellos among the *Tapuyas*, because they spoke a language differing from the dialects of the general language (*lingoa geral*). The Coroado Indians are believed to be the remains of this once powerful tribe.† A mission or village of this tribe exists at St. Fidelis, on the banks of the Paraïba, thirty miles above St. Salvador, and two below the last fall of the river. It was founded between thirty and forty years ago, by four *padres*, Italian capuchins, two of whom were still living at the time of Prince Maximilian's visit: one had the management of the establishment at St. Fidelis; the other resided at the Aldeia do Pedra, seven or eight leagues higher up the

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 330, 1. The instance of St. Pedro has already been mentioned.—See p. 200.

† So it is stated in the *Corografia Brasilica;* "but this," remarks Prince Maximilian, "is improbable, as the Goaytacases suffered their hair to grow long, and the Coroadoes in former times derived their name from the custom of cutting it all off, except a small crown." Their affinity to the Coropoes and the Puries, is attested by the similarity of their respective dialects, their weapons, and their habits. "Our young Coropo," says his highness, "spoke all three languages." Their head-quarters are in Minas Geraes.

river. At St. Fidelis, there are also some of the Coropo tribe, the whole of which is said to be now civilized; "that is to say, settled," for they still retain, as well as the Coroadoes, many of their savage habits and customs.* The inhabitants of this mission are thus described by his highness of Wied Neuwied.

"We found these people still very original, with dark-brown complexions, perfectly national physiognomy, very strongly marked features and coal-black hair. Their houses are good and roomy, constructed of wood and clay, the roofs covered with palm-leaves and reeds, like those of the Portuguese. Their sleeping-nets are hung up in them, and the bow and arrows stand in the corner, leaning against the wall. The rest of their simple furniture is composed of pots, dishes, or bowls (*cuias*), made by themselves of gourds and the calebash-tree, hand-baskets of interlaced palm-leaves, and a few other articles. Their clothing consists of a white cotton shirt and breeches; but on Sundays they are better dressed, and are then not distinguishable from the lower order of Portuguese; but even then the men frequently go with their heads and feet bare. The women, or the contrary, are more elegant, sometimes wear a veil, and are fond of finery. They all speak Portuguese, but among one another they generally converse in their national language.

"As the day after our arrival at St. Fidelis was Sunday, we attended mass in the morning, in the church of the monastery, where the inhabitants of the neighbouring country had assembled, purely out of curiosity, to see the strange visiters. Father Joâo delivered a long sermon, of which I did not understand a word. We afterwards walked through the uninhabited monastery, and inspected

* The Coroadoes of Aldeia do Pedro, only a month before the visit of P. Maximilian, had, in one of their expeditions, shot a Puri, and made great rejoicings on that occasion for several days.

its curiosities. The church is large, light, and spacious, and was painted by Father Victorio, who died only about two months before. This missionary had very zealously promoted the welfare of the Indians, and his memory was much respected by them, whereas they seemed not to be so much attached to the present priest: the Indians had indeed once driven away the latter, alleging, that he could give them no instruction, because he was no more than themselves. The painting in the interior of the church cannot indeed be called beautiful, but it is tolerable, and a great ornament in this remote and unfrequented spot, which agreeably surprises the traveller. The names of the four missionaries are inscribed behind the altar. On the sides hung a number of votive tablets, among which is a painting representing a slave whose arm became entangled in the works of a sugar-mill, which, when the negro in his anguish invoked a saint, immediately stood still. Such accidents befall the negroes but too often, because those people are very careless and imprudent. The convent is not large, but it has a tolerable number of light, cheerful apartments, and a low tower. The trouble of ascending its half-dilapidated stairs was rewarded by the agreeable prospect of the beautiful and romantic valley." *

From St. Fidelis, there is a road over the mountains to Canta Gallo, and another to Minas Geraes. The river here is of considerable breadth, and up to the *cachoeira* (cataract) above St. Fidelis, is said to contain seventy-two islands. In the rainy season it overflows its banks to a great extent. Opposite to St. Fidelis, on the other side of the river, is a settlement of the Puries, who, wandering about the great deserts between the sea and the north bank of the Paraïba, † extend themselves as far west as the

* P. Maximilian's Travels, pp. 109—12.

† The Paraïba, pronounced, and sometimes written Parahyba,

Rio Pomba in Minas Geraes. In this quarter they had behaved peaceably, although, at Aldeia do Pedro, they were at war with the Coroadoes. "When kindly treated, they fix themselves near the plantations, but then they consume the produce of them, as if they were cultivated for their benefit; they even frequently rob the negroes of their shirts and breeches, when they are employed in the woods near the plantations." It was one of the chief objects of Prince Maximilian's journey to these parts, to obtain information respecting the original inhabitants. Crossing the river, therefore, he repaired to a fazenda, the proprietor of which obligingly despatched his brother into the wood, to inform the Puries, that some strangers were arrived, who wished to hold a talk with them, and to invite them to a great sacrifice on the occasion. Five men and three or four women, with their children, first accepted the invitation: they are thus described.

"They were all short, not above five feet five inches

runs between the Serra dos Orgaos and the Serra de Mantiqueira, having its rise about five leagues to the north-west of Paraty in the district of Ilha Grande, where it has at first the name of Paritinga. Flowing south-west, it collects the waters of a very mountainous district: it then turns in a contrary direction, running north-east for about 200 miles, without receiving any fresh contribution till it is joined by the Paraty from the serra of Ilha Grande. Their united waters, rolling on a hundred miles further, absorb those of the Parahibuna and the Piabuna, two streams coming from the north-west and the south-west. About fifty miles more to the eastward, it is joined by the Pomba from the north-west. A little lower it receives the Bengalas, soon after which it descends the precipitous fall of St. Fidelis. Its whole descent is about 6000 feet; its bed, through the whole course, is rocky, occasionally deep, and forms an almost continued succession of rapids. The banks are generally bold and abrupt; hence it is subject to floods, which sometimes roll along with frightful impetuosity. It abounds with a great variety of fish.—See Luccock, p. 274; Henderson, p. 35.

high; * most of them, the women as well as the men, were broad and strong-limbed. They were all quite naked, except a few who wore handkerchiefs round their waists, or short breeches, which they had obtained from the Portuguese. Some had their heads entirely shorn; others had their naturally thick, coal-black hair, cut over the eyes, and hanging down into the neck; some of them had their beards and eyebrows cut short. In general, they have but little beard; in most of them, it forms only a thin circle round the mouth, and hangs down about three inches below the chin. Some had painted on their foreheads and cheeks, round red spots with *urucu:* on the breast and arms, on the contrary, they all had dark-blue stripes, made of the juice of the *genipaba* fruit. These are the two colours which are employed by all the *Tapuyas.* Round the neck, or across the breast and one shoulder, they had rows of hard, black berries strung together, in the middle of which, in front, was a number of the eye-teeth of monkeys, ounces, cats, and wild animals. Some of them wore these necklaces without teeth. They have another similar ornament, which appears to be composed of the rind of certain vegetable excrescences, probably the thorns of some shrub. The men carry in their hands long bows and arrows, which, as well as all their effects, they at our desire bartered for trifles. Two of them had been brought up in their childhood among the Portuguese, and spoke their language a little. We gave them knives, rosaries, small looking-glasses, and distributed among them some bottles of sugar-brandy, † on

* Among all the tribes on the east coast, seen by this traveller, he considered the Puries to be the smallest in stature. "All the Brazilian tribes are," he states, "inferior in this respect to the Europeans, and even to the negroes."

† This ill-judged practice, almost universally adopted by European travellers, of making presents to the natives of strong liquors,

which they became extremely cheerful and familiar. We informed them of our intention to visit them in their woods early in the morning, if they would receive us well; and, on our promising also to bring some presents with us, they took their leave highly pleased, and with loud shouts and singing hastened back to their wilds."

The next morning, accordingly, the poor savages, eager for the brandy, were seen early coming out of the woods. They were "treated" immediately with the "strong water," and his highness then accompanied them to the forest, where the whole horde had turned out, and were lying on the grass. Men, women, and children were huddled together, and contemplated the visiters with curious but timid looks. "They had all adorned themselves," we are told, "as much as possible. A few of the women wore a cloth round the waist or over the breast; but most of them were without any covering. Some of the men had, by way of ornament, a piece of the skin of a monkey, of the kind called *mono* (*ateles*), fastened round their brows; and we observed also a few who had cut off their hair quite close. The women carried their little children partly in bandages fastened over the right shoulder; others carried them on their backs, supported by broad bandages passing over the forehead. This is the manner in which they usually carry their baskets of provisions when they travel. Some of the men and girls were much painted; they had a red spot on the forehead and cheeks, and some of them red stripes on the face; others had black stripes lengthwise, and transverse strokes with dots over the body; and many of the little children were marked all over, like a leopard, with little black dots. This painting seems to be arbitrary, and to be regulated by their individual taste.

cannot be too strongly deprecated: it is ultimately as impolitic as it is injurious to the Indians.

Some of the girls wore a certain kind of ribbons round their heads; and the females in general fasten a bandage of bass or cord tightly round the wrists and ancles, in order, as they say, to make those parts small and elegant. The figure of the men is in general robust, squat, and often very muscular; the head large and round; the face broad, with mostly high cheek-bones; the eyes black, small, and sometimes oblique; the nose short and broad, and their teeth very white: but some were distinguished by sharp features, small aquiline noses, and very lively eyes, which in very few of them have a pleasing look, but, in most, a grave, gloomy, and cunning expression, shaded by their projecting foreheads. One of the men was distinguished from all the rest by his Calmuck physiognomy; he had a large round head, the hair of which was all cut to an inch in length, a very muscular, robust body, a short, thick neck, and a broad, flat face; his eyes, which were placed obliquely, were rather larger than those of the Calmucks usually are, very black, staring, and wild; the eyebrows were black, bushy, and much arched; the nose small, but with wide nostrils; the lips rather thick. This fellow, who, as our attendants said, had never been seen here before, appeared to us all so formidable, that we unanimously declared we should not like to meet him alone unarmed in a solitary place.

"All the men here carried their weapons, consisting of long bows and arrows, in their hands. The bow of the Puries and Coroadoes measures six feet and a half, or even more: it is smooth, made of the hard, tough, dark-brown wood of the *airi* palm, and has a string composed of fibres of *grawatha* (*bromelia*). The arrows of the Puries are often above six feet long, made of a firm knotty reed (*taquara*), which grows in the dry woods, feathered at the lower extremity with beautiful blue or red feathers, or with those of the peacock-pheasant or of

the jacutinga. Those of the Coroadoes are made of another reed, which has no joints. None of the tribes which I visited on this coast, poison their arrows: the ingenuity of these people, who are in the lowest stage of civilization, has, happily, not attained this art.

"When our first curiosity was satisfied, we requested the savages to conduct us to their huts. The whole troop preceded, and we followed on horseback. The way led into a valley which crossed the sugar-plantations; it then decreased to a narrow path, till at length, in the thickest of the forest, we came to some huts, called *cuari* in the language of the Puries. They are certainly some of the most simple in the world. The sleeping-net, which is made of *embira* (bass from a kind of *cecropia*), is suspended between two trunks of trees, to which, higher up, a pole is fastened transversely by means of a rope of bind-weed (*cipo*), against which large palm-leaves are laid obliquely on the windward side, and these are lined below with *heliconia* or *pattioba* leaves, and, when near the plantations, with those of the banana. Near a small fire on the ground lie some vessels of the fruit of the *crescentia cujete*, or a few gourd-shells, a little wax, various trifles of dress or ornament, reeds for arrows and arrow-heads, some feathers, and provisions, such as bananas and other fruit. The bows and arrows stand against a tree, and lean dogs rush loudly barking upon the stranger who approaches this solitude. The huts are small, and so exposed on every side, that when the weather is unfavourable, the brown inmates are seen seeking protection against it by crowding close round the fire, and cowering in the ashes: at other times, the man lies stretched at his ease in his hammock, while the woman attends the fire, and broils meat, which is stuck on a pointed stick. Fire, which the Puries call *poté*, is a prime necessary of life with all the Brazilian tribes: they never suffer it to go

out, and keep it up the whole night, because they would otherwise, owing to the want of clothing, suffer severely from the cold; and because it is also attended with the important advantage of scaring all wild beasts from their huts.

"As soon as we reached the huts, our exchange of commodities was set on foot. We made the women presents of rosaries, of which they are particularly fond, though they pulled off the cross, and laughed at this sacred emblem of the catholic church. They have also a strong predilection for red woollen caps, knives, and red handkerchiefs, and most readily parted with their bows and arrows in exchange for these articles. The women were very eager after looking-glasses, but they set no value upon scissors. We obtained from them by barter a great number of bows and arrows, and several large baskets. The latter are of green palm-leaves interwoven together: below, where they lie against the back, they have a bottom of platted work, and a high border of the same on the sides, but are generally open at top. All the savages frequently offer for sale large balls of wax, which they collect when gathering wild honey. They use this dark-brown wax in preparing their bows and arrows, and also for candles, which they sell to the Portuguese. The Tapuyas make these candles, which burn extremely well, by wrapping a wick of cotton round a thin stick of wax, and then rolling the whole firmly together. They set a high value on their knife, which they fasten to a string round the neck, and let it hang down upon the back: it frequently consists only of a piece of iron, which they are constantly whetting on stones, and thus keep it very sharp. If you give them a knife, they generally break off the handle, and make another according to their own taste, by putting the blade between two pieces of wood, which they bind fast together with a string." *

* Maximilian's Travels, pp. 115—120.

Rude insensibility, except under the stimulus of physical appetite or the passion of revenge, is represented as the most distinguishing trait of these savages. One of the horde sold his son to their visiters for a shirt, two knives, a handkerchief, some beads, and some small mirrors; and the boy neither changed countenance at hearing his fate, nor took leave of his friends. They have in general several wives. No idols were seen among them; but they recognise in the thunder the voice of a supreme being, whom they call *Tupan*. Prince Maximilian says, that the Puries would never confess that they eat human flesh; but, that they feast on the bodies of their slaughtered enemies, is attested by various witnesses. It certainly is a disgrace to the Brazilian government, that some effectual plan is not adopted to civilize these degraded members of the human race, and to render these fertile and extensive territories subservient to the wants of civilized man. The Puries are the principal tribe now remaining in these uncleared regions, and either their civilization or their extermination cannot be an event very distant.

It only remains to notice in this province, the chief places in the mountainous, but fertile district of Ilha Grande, which occupies its south-western extremity. Parati, situated near the river of the same name, on the western side of the bay of Ilha Grande, was created a town in 1660. It has, as usual, a *juiz de fora*, and royal professors; the parish church is dedicated to Our Lady of Remedies, and it has two other chapels. Its commerce is considerable. Its rum, in particular, is in great request. It is about 60 miles W. of Rio.

Angra dos Reys, the most ancient town in the province, but now fallen into decay, is about twenty-five miles N. E. of Parati: it stands among the frontier mountains of Ilha Grande, which name it frequently takes, and is defended

by two redoubts. It has a parish church dedicated to Our Lady of Conception, two chapels, a convent of Franciscans, whose domains are said to be constantly on the increase, and one of slippered Carmelites. It has the same *juiz de fora* as Parati, and professors of the same kind. Its commerce is pretty considerable, and vessels of the largest size can anchor in its port. The vine and the fig-tree thrive in its vicinity.* The uncommon fertility of the soil of the adjacent country, has induced many families to move into this district; and since 1811, a new town has been formed upon the eastern bank of the Mambucaba, near its embouchure. A few leagues to the north, near the margin of the same river, is the picturesque mountain of Taypicu, having the form of a sugar-loaf; and not far from its source, is the celebrated pinnacle commonly called the Friar's Hood, from its supposed resemblance to the cowl of a Franciscan. It is near the southern point of the great Serro of *Bocaina* or *Bucaina*, which is stated by Mr. Luccock to have given name to the Buccaneers.† "The interior of this country," says the same traveller, "is as mountainous and broken as any in Brazil; yet much of the land is rich, and its crops of coffee are abundant. It is thinly inhabited by a hardy and industrious

* "The elevation of the place," says Mr. Luccock, "4000 feet above the sea, is favourable to both."

† The name of the *Serro* was itself derived, Mr. L. states, from a practice of the inhabitants, who roasted their meat on wooden trivets or stages, whence the oily part dropped into and fed the fire beneath. Mr. Southey derives the word *Buccaneers* immediately from this practice, without noticing the name of the mountain. Describing the cannibal feasts of the Tupinambas, he says: "Four forked stakes were driven into the ground, sticks were laid across, and on this they rather dried than broiled the flesh. This wooden frame was called the *Boucan;* food thus smoked and dried was said to be buccaneered; and hence the origin of the name applied to that extraordinary race of freebooters who were so long the scourge of the Spaniards in South America."—*Hist. of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 207.

race, who want only roads to convey their produce to the coast or to a market; a want not likely to be soon supplied. Many civilized Indians reside in this district. Passing through one of their villages, we found the people sitting under alcoves placed in front of their huts, dressed in all the finery which the cheapness of British goods had introduced among them."

Proceeding southward, we now enter on the province of

SANTO PAULO.

THIS province, formed by the union of a part of the old capitania of St. Amaro with half of that of St. Vincente, took its present name in the year 1710, when John V., having incorporated them with the crown lands by purchase, appointed the city of St. Paulo as the residence of the captain-general. It is divided from the province of Rio on the north-east, by a line which, traversing the heights of the vast Serro from the point of Joatinga to the head of the Jacuy, descends that river till it joins the Paraïba.* The serra of Mantiqueira separates it from Minas Geraes on the north; the Rio Grande and the Paranna from Goyaz and Matto Grosso on the west and north-west; the Sahy from St. Catherina on the south; and on the east, it has for its boundary the Atlantic. Its territory is almost all within the temperate zone, between 20° 30′ and 28° S. lat., comprising 450 miles from north to south, and 340 miles of medium width.† It is divided by the last arrangement, which dates from February 1812, into three *comarcas* or *ouvidorias;* St. Paulo, Hitu, and Curytiba, each being designated by its principal town. Except in the eastern part, where a *cordillera*, or elevated ridge of mountains, runs parallel with the coast, this province is not mountainous. None of the maritime provinces, with the exception of Para, contain so many navi-

* Luccock, p. 272. † Henderson.

gable rivers; but all these, excluding only the few streams or mountain torrents which descend the eastern declivity of the cordillera, flow into the interior, and are swallowed up by the Paranna; so that they afford no facilities to commerce.

The city of St. Paulo, which gives its name to the province, is the oldest in Brazil,* and beyond every other interesting in an historical point of view. "Here, more than in any other place," says Dr. Von Spix, "we find the present connected with the past. The Paulista is sensible of this, and says, not without pride, that his native city has a history of its own." The celebrated Anchieta and his brother Jesuits commenced this city in the year 1552, with the foundation of a college, in which they celebrated the first mass on St. Paul's day. When, six years after, it acquired the denomination of a town, its name was determined by this circumstance. Its first inhabitants were a horde of Guayana Indians under their cacique, Tebireça, who had resided in the *aldeia* of Piratinin, near the small river of that name, not far from the new colony, which, in consequence, took the name of St. Paulo de Piratininga.† The Indians were soon joined by a great number of Europeans, and a mixed race rapidly augmented the population; so that before a century had elapsed, the Paulistas had become formidable by their numbers, as they were distinguished by their spirit of enterprise.

"The accounts of earlier historians," says Dr. Von Spix, "describe the Paulistas as a lawless tribe, resisting every legitimate constraint of custom and moral feeling, who, for that very reason, had renounced the dominion of Portugal, and formed a separate republic. This opinion was caused also by the reports of the Jesuits, who certainly

* St. Salvador (Bahia) only claims a rival antiquity, being founded by Thome de Souza in 1550.

† See page 21.

had good grounds at that time to be discontented with the conduct of the Paulistas. Subsequently to the year 1629, the latter frequently made incursions into the Indian colonies of the Jesuits in Paraguay, and with incredible cruelty carried off all the natives as slaves. These plundering excursions, as well as their enterprises in search of gold to Minas, Goyaz, and Cuiaba, gave to the character of the Paulistas of that time a selfish rudeness and insensibility, and inspired them with a disregard for all relations consecrated by law and humanity, which naturally drew upon them the severest reprobation of the fathers, who were animated with enthusiastic zeal for the welfare of mankind. *

" This rude character is, however, now softened, and the Paulista enjoys, throughout Brazil, the reputation of great frankness, undaunted courage, and a romantic love of adventures and dangers. It is true," continues Dr. Von Spix, " that in conjunction with these commendable qualities, a propensity to anger and revenge, pride and stubbornness, have remained in his character, and he is therefore feared by his neighbours; the stranger, however, sees in his haughty manner, only earnestness and an independent spirit; in his good-natured frankness and

* The Paulistas, although they did not designate the domestic Indians by the appellation of captives, or slaves, but by that of *administrados*, disposed of them as such, giving them to their creditors in payment of debts, and by way of dowry on occasions of marriage. The Jesuits, who possessed or had the control over a great number of Indians, and under whose power they received the denomination of *administrados*, without any consequences of slavery being attached to the term, declaimed against the abuses practised by the Paulistas, and demonstrated to them the impropriety of usurping a right to dispose of the liberty of the Indian. The Paulistas, who were opulent, and owed all their wealth to the arms of their numerous *administrados*, determined to repel the Jesuits, in order that the truths which they promulgated should not militate against their interests."—*Henderson's History of Brazil*, p. 175.

hospitality, an amiable feature; in his industry, the activity that marks the inhabitants of a temperate zone; and has less occasion than his neighbours to become acquainted with his faults. The only excuse for his pride is, that he can boast of having a claim, through the actions of his forefathers, to this new continent, which the settlers from Europe cannot adduce. There is no manner of doubt that the first comers contracted frequent marriages with the neighbouring Indians, and the complexion and physiognomy of the people indicate the mixture here, more than in the other cities of Brazil, for instance, in Maranham and Bahia. Many whites have, however, at all times settled here; and many families of Paulistas have preserved themselves without mixture with the Indians: these are as white, nay, even whiter, than the purer descendants of the Europeans in the northern provinces of Brazil. The mamelucoes of various degrees have coffee-coloured, bright yellow, or nearly white complexions; but the broad, round face with high cheek-bones, the small black eyes, and a certain unsteadiness of look, betray, more or less, the Indian origin. In general, the principal characteristics of the Paulistas are, a lofty, and, at the same time, broad make, strongly marked features, expressive of a bold, independent spirit, hazel eyes (they are very rarely blue), full of fire and ardour, thick, black, smooth hair, muscular make, firmness, and vivacity in their motions. They are justly considered as the strongest, most healthy, and most active inhabitants of Brazil. The strength with which they tame horses, and catch the wild cattle by means of the noose, is as surprising as the ease with which they endure continued labour and fatigue, hunger and thirst, cold and heat, wet, and privations of all kinds. In their expeditions on the inland rivers to Cujaba and Matto-Grosso, they display now, as formerly, the greatest boldness and perseverance in dangers and hardships of

every description; and an unconquerable love of travelling still impels them to leave their country. We accordingly find, all over Brazil, more single colonists from St. Paulo, than from any other province. This roaming kind of life they have probably inherited from their ancestors. On the whole, the Paulistas may be said to have a melancholy disposition inclining to be choleric. They characterize thereby, in some degree, in a moral view, the zone which they inhabit; for the nearer we approach the equator, the more decidedly do we find the choleric, irritable character expressed.

"The women of St. Paulo have the same simplicity as the men. The tone of society is jovial and unaffected, animated by ready and cheerful pleasantry. They have been unjustly accused of giddiness. If the spirit of conversation is strongly contrasted with the refined manners of their European relatives, among whom a jealous etiquette prohibits the unrestrained expression of feeling, their artless liveliness does not excite surprise, in a province where a free and simple mode of thinking has been retained more than in any other part of Brazil. The women of St. Paulo are of tall and slender, though not delicate make, graceful in their motions, and have in the features of their well-formed countenances an agreeable mixture of cheerfulness and frankness. Their complexion, too, is not so pale as that of most Brazilian women, and they are on that account reckoned to be the handsomest women of Brazil." *

Mr. Mawe, who visited St. Paulo in 1807, gives a similar representation of the state of society in this capital. "The appellation of Paulista," he says, "is considered by all the females here as a great honour, the Paulistas being celebrated throughout all Brazil for their

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. ii. pp. 5—8.

attractions and their dignity of character. At table they are extremely abstemious. Their favourite amusement is dancing, in which they display much vivacity and grace. At balls and other public festivals, they generally appear in elegant white dresses, with a profusion of gold chains about their necks, their hair tastefully disposed and fastened with combs.* Their conversation, at all times sprightly, seems to derive additional life from music. Indeed, the whole range of their education appears to be confined to superficial accomplishments: they trouble themselves very little with domestic concerns, confiding whatever relates to the inferior departments of the household to the negro or negress cook, and leaving all other matters to the management of servants. Owing to this indifference, they are total strangers to the advantages of that order, neatness, and propriety, which reign in an English family. Their time at home is mostly occupied in sewing, embroidery, and lace-making. Another circumstance repugnant to delicacy, is, that they have no mantua-makers of their own sex; all articles of female dress here are made by tailors. An almost universal debility prevails among them, which is partly attributable to their abstemious living, but chiefly to want of exercise, and to the frequent warm-bathings in which they indulge. They are extremely attentive to every means of improving the delicacy of their persons, perhaps to the injury of their health.

"The men in general, especially those of the higher rank, officers, and others, dress superbly: in company,

* Abroad, or as a general sort of undress at home, many wear a "long coat of coarse woollen, edged with gold lace, velvet, fustian, or plush, according to the rank of the wearer." With this is worn, out of doors, a round hat. But few ladies appear in the streets without the long black veil or cloak, made either of silk or kerseymere, and trimmed with broad lace.

they are very polite and attentive, and shew every disposition to oblige; they are great talkers, and prone to conviviality. The lower ranks, compared with those of other colonial towns, are in a very advanced state of civilization. It were to be wished that some reform were instituted in their system of education. The children of slaves are brought up, during their early days, with those of their masters; they are playmates and companions; and thus a familiar equality is established between them, which has to be forcibly abolished when they arrive at that age at which the one must command and live at his ease, while the other must labour and obey. It has been said, that, by thus attaching the slave to his master in early youth, they ensure his future fidelity; but the custom seems fraught with many disadvantages, and ought at least to be so modified as to render the yoke of bondage less galling by the recollection of former liberty." *

The taste for European luxuries, however, had by no means, at the time of Dr. Von Spix's visit in 1817, made so much progress among the inhabitants of St. Paulo, as with the more opulent citizens of Bahia, Pernambuco, and Maranham. "Convenience and cleanliness," this traveller states, "are more attended to, than elegance and splendour in their household arrangements. Instead of the light North American furniture and French looking-glasses which are seen in the other provinces, we found in the *salas* only a row of heavy chairs, venerable for their antiquity, and a small glass, which, from its Nuremberg frame, the German recognizes as a countryman. Instead of large glass lamps and wax tapers, a brass lamp stands upon the table, in which they usually burn castor-oil. In the tone of society, too, we equally remarked the proportionably smaller influence of Europe. Cards are much

* Mawe's Travels in Brazil, p. 114—116.

less frequently called in as a resource than in the other capitanias; but the louder is the conversation, which alternates with singing and dancing."

The singing of the Paulista ladies is described as simple and unaffected. The national songs are chiefly pastoral and amatory: those of Brazilian origin are said to be the best. The guitar is the constant accompaniment. As to other instrumental performances, the music of the theatre "resembled a chaos of elementary sounds," scarcely an instrument being properly played; and the representation of the opera "was worthy of those times when the theatrical car of Thespis first passed through the streets of Athens." The actors were all either blacks or mulattoes. A bull-fight was given during the visit of this traveller, but it went off very indifferently; and, to the credit of the Paulistas, the diversion is not popular. *

Literature would seem to have made little progress in St. Paulo, since the only library of the city, besides that of the Carmelites, belongs to the bishop: † but the Roman classics, we are told, are diligently studied at the gymnasium; and the Kantean philosophy has actually been introduced through the medium of an indifferent translation. "Antonio Ildefonso Ferreira, the second professor of philosophy, had made himself pretty well acquainted with the system of the northern philosopher; and we were very agreeably surprised," says the Bavarian professor, "at finding the terms and ideas of the German school naturalized on American ground." There is a theological seminary, at which young ecclesiastics are expected to study several years prior to taking orders; but they are not so strict here, we are told, in conferring or-

* A wooden circus for bull-fights had only recently been erected, out of the city, by Lieut.-Col. Muller.

† St. Paulo was dignified with the title of a city in 1712; but it was not constituted an episcopal see till 1746.

dination, as at Rio, Pernambuco, and other Brazilian cities. In what that strictness consists, which prevails elsewhere, we are not informed, nor what is the character of the Paulista clergy. Mr. Mawe, however, represents them as "free from that excessive bigotry and illiberality which are the reproach of the neighbouring colonies." He admits, at the same time, their ignorance.

The city is situated on an eminence in the extensive plain of Piratininga, at the angle of the confluence of the Tamandatahi, which washes it on the west, with the Hynhangabahu, which flows on the eastern side. The style of architecture, with the frequent latticed balconies, indicates that it is above a century old. The streets are broad, light, and cleanly; some of them are well paved. The houses, mostly two stories high, are formed of strong planks or wicker-work, filled up with clay, and white-washed: they are, in fact, *casas de taipa*, literally mud-houses, stone or brick being rarely used; but they are said to be very durable.* The residence of the governor,

* The mode of constructing these buildings is thus described by Mr. Mawe. "A frame is constructed of six moveable planks placed edgewise, opposite each other, and secured in this position by cross pieces bolted with moveable pins. Earth is put in by small quantities, which the workmen beat with rammers, and occasionally moisten with water to give it consistency. Having filled the frame, or trough, they remove it, and continue the same operation till the whole shell of the house is completed, taking care to leave vacancies, and put in the window-frames, door-frames, and beams, as they proceed. The mass, in course of time, becomes indurated, the walls are pared perfectly smooth inside, and take any colour the owner chooses to give them: they are generally enriched with very ingenious devices. This species of structure is durable: I have seen some houses thus built that have lasted two hundred years; and most of them have several stories. The roofs are made to project two or three feet beyond the wall, in order to throw off the rain to a distance from the base. Spouts might be a more effectual preservative against wet, but their use is little known here. They cover their houses with gutter-tiles; but, though the country affords

formerly the Jesuits' college, is built in a good style; it is, however, much out of repair. The episcopal palace and the Carmelite convent are large and stately edifices, and the cathedral and some other churches * are spacious; but the ornaments are not in good taste, and the style of architecture is plain and poor. The city is divided into two parishes; that of the cathedral, and that of the church of St. Efigenia. It contains three monasteries, Franciscan, Benedictine, and Carmelite; two *recolhimentos*, or nunneries; a misericordia, various "hermitages," and three hospitals. The inhabitants are indebted to Lieutenant-colonel Muller for three stone bridges thrown over the two streams above-mentioned, which unite below the town: in the construction of these, he has rendered a far more important service to the city, than by the erection of a circus for bull-fights. The population, including the dependent parishes, was estimated, Dr. Von Spix says, at above 30,000 souls, of which half were whites, or such as are called so, and half people of colour; but Mr. Henderson, possibly from more recent documents, makes it between 35 and 40,000†. The whole population of the capitania, which amounted in the year 1777 to only about 117,000, had increased, in the year 1808, to 200,478; in 1814, to 211,928; and in 1815, to 215,021 souls. Of the latter number, the proportions of the three comarcas were, St. Paulo, 127,349; Curytiba,

excellent clay, and plenty of wood, very few bricks are burnt."—*Mawe's Travels*, p. 94.

* Mr. Mawe says eight churches, but he must include the chapels of the religious establishments.

† According to the official census given by Dr. V. Spix, the population of the city in 1815, was not more than 25,313 souls, of whom 12,274 were whites, 845 free blacks, 6239 free mulattoes, and 5,955 slaves. The houses were 4142. In 1811, according to a statistical report cited by Mr. Mawe, the number of houses was 4017, and the population 23,764. He reckons the clergy of all orders at 500: the proportion was not on the increase.

35,841; Hytu, 51,831. Of these, 115,103 were whites, 4,866 free blacks, 44,285 free mulattoes, and 50,767 (not one-fourth) black and mulatto slaves. The mortality is to the population as 1 to 46. St. Paulo is esteemed a most healthy situation; and the climate, Dr. Von Spix says, is one of the most agreeable in the world. Its situation, almost under the tropic of Capricorn, as well as its elevation of 1,200 feet above the surface of the sea at Santos, gives the city all the charms of a tropical climate, without any great inconvenience from heat. It stands in lat. 23° 33′ 10″ S. and long. 46° 39′ 10″ W.

The whole province of St. Paulo is peculiarly well adapted for the breeding of cattle, on account of the extensive plains which form a large proportion of its surface, on which all kinds of cattle, but particularly oxen, horses, and mules, thrive exceedingly well. The horses are very fine, and in general docile: when trained, they make excellent chargers. Their size is from twelve and a half to fourteen and a half hands high. The breed of sheep is quite unattended to, mutton being rarely eaten; but here is a very fine and large breed of goats, whose milk is generally used. Mr. Mawe mentions also a singular breed of cocks, resembling the English in shape and plumage, but their crow is peculiar, very loud, and the last note is prolonged for fifteen or twenty seconds. "When their voice is good, they are much esteemed, and are sent for as curiosities from all parts of Brazil." Cotton and coffee do not thrive very well here, and the sugar-cane but indifferently. Although, according to official returns, it contained, in 1808, no fewer than 458 sugar-mills and 601 stills, the sugar or treacle and rum produced were little more than were required for private consumption. Little mandioc is cultivated, but maize to a great extent, and a considerable quantity is sent to Rio. The gardens in the city and its vicinity are laid out, Mr. Mawe says, with

great taste, and many of them with curious elegance. The jasmine is here a favourite tree, and bears flowers perennially, as does the rose. Carnations, pinks, passion-flowers, &c. grow luxuriantly. Bees are by no means uncommon, and though insects are numerous, the mosquito is less troublesome than in Rio or in La Plata. The environs have a high degree of rural beauty.

Santos is the only harbour in the province which has a direct intercourse with Europe. Though only twelve leagues distant from St. Paulo, it is as much cut off from it by the difficulties of the road, and the want of water communication, as if the distance were four times as great. The road over the Cubatâo, (as that part of the *Serra do Mar* is called, which rises between the capital and the coast,) though it was much improved by Franca e Horta when governor-general, still does not allow of articles being transported in any other way than on the backs of mules. Great expense and labour, therefore, are required to bring to the capital merely a bell or any heavy article. The two other sea-ports of the province, Paranagua and Cananea, are both inconsiderable: the former is 58 leagues, the other 67 leagues from St. Paulo. The trade of the province is, therefore, comparatively small, and the proportion of pecuniary wealth inferior to that of the more northern provinces. "Even in the capital," says Dr. Von Spix, "there is almost a scarcity of current coin, to which the inhabitant of the province is still more indifferent, because, living in patriarchal simplicity, he is a stranger to many European wants, and considers himself as richer in the produce of his great herds, than by the introduction of European money and European luxuries." But, unhappily, this patriarchal simplicity implies a state of things but little removed from moral and intellectual barbarism. The state of manufactures corresponds to that of trade. The domestic manufacture of coarse woollens,

that of common white beaver hats, and lace-making, are the only ones of consequence.* "A little coarse cotton," says Mr. Mawe, "is spun by the hand, and woven into cloth, which serves for a variety of wearing apparel, sheets, &c. They make a beautiful kind of net-work for hammocks, which are trimmed with lace, and form an elegant piece of furniture, being slung low, so as to answer the purpose of sofas. The ladies are particularly fond of using them, especially when the heat of the weather disposes to ease and indolence. The making of lace is a general employment for females, some of whom excel in it. The shopkeepers here are a numerous class, who, as in most colonial towns, deal in almost every thing, and sometimes make large fortunes. Here are few physicians, but many apothecaries; some silversmiths, whose articles are equally indifferent both in metal and workmanship; tailors and shoemakers in great numbers; and joiners, who manufacture very beautiful wood, but are not so moderate in their charges as the former classes of tradesmen. In the outskirts of the city live a number of creole Indians, who make earthenware for culinary purposes, large water-jars, and a variety of other utensils, ornamented with some taste. The greater proportion of the inhabitants consist of farmers and inferior husbandmen, who cultivate small portions of land, on which they breed large stocks of pigs and poultry for sale. With these the market is generally well supplied, and, in the fruit season, is also stored with pines, grapes, peaches, guavas, bananas, a few apples,

* From official documents cited by Dr. Von Spix, it appears, that the total exports of the capitania of St. Paulo in 1813, amounted to 666,942,840 *rees*, or about 190,000*l*., of which not 15,000*l*. was exported to Europe direct, five-sixths being sent to Rio. The imports in the same year amounted to 766,105,028 *rees*, about 218,000*l*., of which a similar proportion was drawn immediately from Oporto. The chief articles of export are sugars, hides, rice, and Peruvian bark.

and an enormous quantity of quinces." Such are the trades of St. Paulo. The low state of the useful arts may be judged of from the circumstance, that the wealthiest graziers are obliged to tan the hides themselves, or salt them raw for exportation. A government manufactory for arms had recently been tranferred hither from Rio, and placed under the superintendence of Lieutenant-colonel Muller; but the eight working masters were all Germans. The bishop amused himself with breeding silk-worms, which are said to produce a very beautiful thread, and the mulberry-tree comes to great perfection in this climate, so that the culture of silk might be carried on with great success. The cochineal insect is also found in many parts of the province, and might be made to furnish an equally profitable branch of trade. But the aversion of the Paulistas to laborious work, so long as they can obtain the rich gifts of nature without trouble, have hitherto prevented the improvement of either branch of productive industry. It is an auspicious circumstance, however, that the rage for mining has passed away: the smelting-house of St. Paulo is broken up, and the gold-hunters have gradually emigrated to the richer provinces of Minas, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso. *

In proceeding to give a sketch of the topography of the province, we shall first avail ourselves of Mr. Mawe's account of his journey across the mountains

* About a century ago, the country round the city abounded with gold, and it was not till they had exhausted it by washing, that the inhabitants thought of employing themselves in husbandry. The grit-stone with which the streets of St. Paulo are paved, is an alluvial formation, containing gold; and after heavy rain, many particles of the precious metal are even now found in the clinks and hollows, which are diligently sought for by the poorer people. A city thus literally paved with gold, surely claims to be considered as the veritable El Dorado.

FROM SANTOS TO ST. PAULO.

APPROACHING from St. Catherine's, between the valuable harbour of San Francisco and that of Santos, the coast is low and flat; but, on nearing Santos, it becomes bolder, and the main land is elevated and mountainous. The harbour of Santos has a safe entrance, and is very secure: it is a strait, having the island of St. Vincente to the left, for the extent of half a mile, when it takes a different direction. Here is situated the port, which has good anchorage, with regular soundings towards the shore. "The part called the narrows is defended by two forts, on passing which there is a kind of lagoon of three or four leagues in length, almost full of mangroves, terminated by the town of Santos. The river, or lagoon, has three or four fathoms water and a muddy bottom."

Santos is one of the oldest European settlements in Brazil. In common with St. Paulo, it is said to owe its origin to the first shipwreck on the island of St. Vincente, on the northern side of which it is situated. The captaincy of St. Vincente was the first of those granted by the crown to the original donatories.* The town of that name, the ancient capital of the province, is situated on the southern coast of the island, at the entrance of the bar, seven miles S.W. of Santos. In former times a flourishing town, it has now sunk into insignificance, its commerce having been transferred to Santos, which is better situated. The inhabitants of St. Vincente are chiefly fishermen. Santos was erected into a town in 1545. Its misericordia is the most ancient in Brazil. Besides this, it contains a Franciscan convent, an *hospicio* of Benedictines, and one of slippered Carmelites, and various chapels. The Jesuits' college, which had been suffered to fall into a dilapi-

* See page 16.

dated state, has been repaired and turned into a military hospital. The town is tolerably well-built, the houses being, for the most part, of stone. The population, consisting chiefly of merchants, shopkeepers, and artificers, amounted, at the time of Mr. Mawe's journey, to between 6 and 7000 souls. The situation is by no means healthy, as the country round is low, woody, and frequently deluged with rain, owing, it is supposed, to the high mountains in the vicinity, which arrest the clouds. Several rivulets flowing from the heights, after intersecting the land in all directions, unite a little above the town in one great river. The rice of this district, which is grown in great quantities, is esteemed the best in Brazil, and the bananas are equally noted. The port is the resort of many vessels trading to the Plata; the Spanish territories, as well as Rio Grande do Sul, being supplied from hence with rice, sugar, coffee, and mandioc, in exchange for hides and tallow, which are exported to Europe. Its intercourse with St. Paulo is considerable, several hundred mules frequently arriving in the course of a day, laden with the produce of the interior, for which they take back salt, iron, earthenwares, and European manufactures. For the traffic of the immediate vicinity it has the convenience of water-carriage, the river being navigable up to Cubatâo, a distance of about twenty miles, and only half a mile from the foot of the mountains.

The inhabitants of Santos are characterised by Mr. Mawe as proverbially notorious for inhospitality. He supposes that the "great influx of strangers and renegadoes from all nations" into this, as well as other towns on the coast, had completely steeled the hearts of the people against all claims on their good-will or civility. In this respect, they are a striking exception to the Brazilians of the interior.

Not far to the north of Santos Bay is the fine island of

St. Sebastian, about seven leagues in length. It lies off the point of Toque Toque, and the strait between it and the main, about two leagues in width, affords an excellent passage and a good harbour for ships of war. The land on both sides is bold and steep, and being well cultivated, has a very grand and rich appearance. In front of the island, near the embouchure of a small river, is seated the town of St. Sebastian. It stands on a low tract of ground at the commencement of a fertile plain, but which was for many years almost abandoned, in consequence of the impolitic restrictions which prevented the inhabitants from exporting the produce to the best markets. The town is inconsiderable, with indifferent houses, and streets of sand, and is by no means, Mr. Mawe says, a desirable, or even tolerable residence for a stranger, being exposed to all the inconveniences peculiar to low, sandy situations, among which rank immense swarms of mosquitoes. It contained, however, in 1807, from 2 to 3000 inhabitants, "an indigent and not very industrious people," who subsisted for the most part on fish. A little indigo was made, and some tolerably good tobacco grown in the neighbourhood. The town was formerly much noted for its very large canoes, made of the solid timber. "Some of them," says Mr. Mawe, "I have seen, of almost incredible dimensions." The neighbouring island, being more elevated, has the advantage of purer air, and is reputed to produce the best sugar, rum, and tobacco, as well as the finest cattle, in all Brazil. On the northern coast of the island stands Villa da Princeza, created a town in 1809, with a chapel dedicated to Our Lady of Luz, which at present serves for the whole island. On the eastern part, there is an *armaçao* for whale-fishing. Between four and five miles to the east of St. Sebastian, near the beach, is the pretty but poor village of Bairro, where a considerable quantity of earthenware is made by

the women for the market of Rio. The men are occupied in fishing. Here is a large Franciscan convent, well built and finely situated, fronting the bay. Nearly thirty miles N.E. of Sebastian, and near the confines of the province, is the small town of Ubatuba. Between this and Bairro are the bays of Flamengos and Inquiriquere, both capable of receiving many ships.

Having ascended the river Cubatâo (or Cubatam) from Santos to the small *arraial* (military station) to which it gives name, Mr. Mawe procured a guide and saddle-mules, and proceeded to ascend the mountain pass. The road is good and well paved, but narrow, and, on account of the rugged acclivities, is cut in a zig-zag direction, with very frequent and abrupt turnings, but continually on the ascent. In many places, it is cut through the solid rock for several feet; in others, along the perpendicular sides; and frequently it leads over the tops of conical mountains along the edge of precipices. These dangerous places are guarded by parapets, but, in case of meeting a train of mules, the passage is in many parts perilous. "After ascending for an hour and a half," says Mr. Mawe, "during which time we made innumerable turnings, we arrived at a resting-place, near which, at a spot a little lower than the road, we found water. This place, as our guide informed us, was only half way to the summit. We were astonished at the intelligence, as the clouds were already so far below us that they obstructed our prospect." The woods are so thick in every part, except where the mules tread, that no soil can be seen. The branches of the trees in some places meet and form an arbour over the road, which shades the traveller from the heat of the sun, or shelters him from rain. Some picturesque streams, bursting from their high sources, occasionally present fine cascades, and crossing the road, force their way through many detached round masses of granite.

" In three hours," continues this traveller, " we reached the summit, a plain of considerable extent, the lowest estimated height of which is 6000 feet.* The surface is chiefly composed of quartz covered with sand. The sea, though distant twenty miles, seemed to wash the foot of the mountains. The level part of the coast, and the port of Santos below us, came not within the angle of vision. Advancing about a mile and a half, we came to a part of the road cut several feet deep through the rock, and observed in this quarter many small streams, which, though contiguous to the sea, all flow in a south-western course to an immense distance, and uniting, form the great river Correntes (Parana), which joins the Plata. After crossing several rivulets, and passing a few houses, we arrived at a tolerable inn, belonging to an officer of militia, where we were provided with milk, coffee, and fowls. It is distant sixteen or twenty miles from St. Paulo, and may be considered as half way between that town and Santos. We then proceeded through a much more open country, which bore the traces of former cultivation, and seemed to have been of late much neglected. As we drew nearer St. Paulo, the road improved, and was enlivened by a greater number of habitations. We passed two convents, distinguished by large crosses erected before them. The land is watered by several fine streams. St. Paulo, although on an elevated site, is not observed at any great distance

* " The millions of crowns," remarks Mr. Mawe, " which must have been expended in clearing the woods and thickets in the course of this road, and in cutting through the solid rocks for a considerable distance, as well as in paving it through the whole extent of the ridge, afford no mean idea of the enterprising spirit of the Brazilians. Few public works, even in Europe, are superior to it; and if we consider that, by reason of the scanty population of the district through which it passes, the labour bestowed on it must have been purchased most dearly, we shall hardly find one in any country so well completed under similar disadvantages."

in this direction. In its immediate neighbourhood, the river runs parallel to the road, which it sometimes partially overflows and covers with sand. On entering the town, we were struck with the appearance of its houses, stuccoed in various colours." * The city is approached to more advantage from the north. Seen from the eminence of Nossa Senhora da Penha, it has a very grand appearance. Dr. Von Spix, who visited St. Paulo ten years after Mr. Mawe, arrived by this route from Rio. The road

FROM RIO DE JANEIRO TO ST. PAULO

Has already been described as far as Santa Cruz. A very good road leads from that town, almost in a straight line, to a bridge, where formerly was a barrier at which all travellers were examined, to prevent the smuggling of gold dust. The country is an open level, watered by numerous pools and streams, bounded to the S. and W. by the Serra do Mar, which here sends out a branch in a direction nearly east and west, extending, under the name of Serra da Ilha Grande, to the Bay of Angra dos Reys. The road, after leaving the plains of Santa Cruz, is a very steep ascent to the summit over which it passes; it then turns from the coast into the interior, running among the thickly wooded mountains, through several well watered valleys, but lonesome and gloomy from the absence of cultivation. As the traveller proceeds, these valleys contract on all sides, and the journey becomes more and more difficult and dangerous from the increasing steepness of the mountains. Profound silence reigns here; and, with the exception of a few wretched clay huts, or spots recently cleared of wood, he meets with

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 86—91.

nothing to remind him of man in these majestic scenes of savage nature. At Retiro, a miserable fazenda in a narrow, swampy valley, not far from the little villa of S. Joâo Marcos, Dr. Von Spix and his companion passed the first night in the open air. "The uraponga had ceased his strangely-sounding notes; the swarms of grass-hoppers commenced, as night set in, their monotonous chirp, at intervals interrupted by the notes of a large frog, resembling a drum, the lament of the capueira, and the dull cry of the goat-sucker. Affected by the constantly returning impressions, we felt ourselves in a strange and solemn mood in the lonely wilderness, which was further increased when the firmament, with all the splendour of the southern constellations, beamed on the dark forest, and millions of shining beetles fluttered in luminous circles through the hedges, till at length a heavy rain veiled all in darkness. The woody ridge of mountains, through which we had hitherto travelled, is the highest part of that branch of the Serra do Mar, which, in general, about three thousand feet high, runs towards the sea-coast from the principal chain, which runs to the north. The next mountains over which we passed are lower, and rise at longer intervals. The road is sometimes cut very deep in the soil, which consists of red clay, is very narrow, and, when two troops of mules meet, as it often happens, dangerous. This kind of road is, however, welcome in luxuriant forests, because the confining all travellers to one narrow path, prevents it from being quickly overgrown, as would otherwise happen. Paved roads and bridges are, of course, to be found nowhere in these solitudes, though the ground in the neighbourhood of the numerous streams is quite swampy, especially in the rainy season."

Four leagues from Retiro is the fazenda dos Negros; beyond which the road crosses a second chain of granite

mountains, stretching from N.W. to S.E. towards the sea, and from its most northern valleys sending the Paratininga and the Rio Turbo to the Paraïba. To the south of the *freguezia* (parish) of Bananal, several other chains of mountains nearly parallel, and all thickly wooded, run from the west towards the ocean. "We passed," says Dr. V. Spix, "in two days' journey, the first of these, the outlines of which are more rounded and of more agreeable form, having between them some light valleys with pools and rich meadows. Several colonists have settled in these valleys by the side of small streams; and their extensive plantations of Turkish wheat give the first appearance of culture to those lonely tracts. The third mountain ridge, *Morro Formoza*, resembles, by its bolder forms and larger and irregular masses, the mountains round about Rio: it constitutes the frontier of the provinces of Rio and St. Paulo, and divides the rivers in this eastern branch of the Serra do Mar.

"The road from the *Morro Formoza* gradually declines through low mountains, which are more open and agreeable, and where population and culture increase. On the third day, after we had left Bananal, and passed the river and the little place Barreiro, we reached St. Anna das Arêas, a pretty considerable town, but which having arisen within these five and thirty years in this thickly-wooded mountain, out of the settlement of a few poor colonists, cannot, of course, as yet present a picture of high prosperity.* The low houses, built of slight laths, simply interwoven with twigs and plastered with clay, and the little church, which is constructed in the same manner, seem very ephemeral, so that these dwellings appear erected merely as temporary places of refuge for wanderers. We found by far the greater part of all the

* It had only lately been raised by the king to the rank of a villa, and is not mentioned by Henderson.

towns in the interior of Brazil like this town; and the rarity of a well-built and comfortable house frequently excited regret for the conveniences and cleanliness of our native land. In the neighbourhood of Arêas, there is still a considerable village of Indians, the remains of the numerous tribes who, previously to the occupation of the Serra do Mar by the Paulistas, inhabited the whole of the extensive forests of this chain, and are now either extinct, or, mixed with negroes and mulattoes, live in a state of half-civilization among the colonists. They are still distinguished by the indolence and almost untameable obstinacy of their forefathers, and have but little intercourse with the colonists, whose plantations and cattle frequently suffer from the predatory attacks of these troublesome neighbours."

The travellers halted for the night in the deep valley of Tacasava, where they found several caravans encamped, who were conveying fowls to the market at Rio, a distance of about a hundred leagues! The next day, they saw pass the magnificent caravan of the bishop of Cordova, who, driven from his residence by the political revolutions in the Spanish colonies, was travelling, with a Portuguese escort, from Monte Video to Rio, where he intended to embark for Europe. He had already been four months upon the road in traversing eleven degrees of latitude: he might have returned by sea to Europe in less time.

Two days more, still proceeding in a south-westerly direction, brought the travellers to the last summit of the Serra do Mar, from which they looked down on a deep and pleasant valley, bounded to the west, at the distance of about two miles, by a part of the Serra do Mantiqueira. The Paraïba, after issuing from the narrow valleys of the first chain of mountains, flows into this valley towards the north, and at Jacarehy, takes a direction quite opposite to its former course. At Lorena (or Guaypacare), a small

town near the Paraïba, at which they halted for the night, a side road branches out, which leads to Minas Geraes. The road from St. Paulo to Minas crosses the Paraïba at two points; the one above mentioned, called Porto do Meyra, and another a league before reaching Lorena, called Porto da Cachoeira. South of Lorena, the savage character of the forests disappeared, and plains and gently rising hills succeeded, covered with scattered bushes and extensive tracts of verdure. Though in some places swampy, this part of the valley of the Paraïba is one of the most fruitful districts of St. Paulo, and yields excellent tobacco. Guarantingueta, the next stage, styled by Mr. Henderson a considerable town, is situated on a pleasant hill in an extensive savannah near the river. Its Indian name presents a favourable specimen (Dr. V. Spix remarks) of the talent for observation possessed by the aboriginal inhabitants. "This long word signifies the place where the sun turns back. In fact, the tropic of Capricorn is scarcely a degree south of the villa, which pleases by its cheerful appearance and some traces of a superior mode of life. Since our departure from Rio, this was the first place where we saw any glass windows, which, in Brazil, always indicate prosperity, and, in the interior, even luxury. On the other hand, the traveller is surprised at the want of all regularity and order in the exercise of trades. In a place containing some thousand inhabitants, we were obliged to be content with a frugal meal on an armadillo, which we had shot by the way. The flesh of this animal has, indeed, an agreeable taste, resembling fowl, but is very fat.

"The road goes from the villa, always south-west, through the valley of the Paraïba. To the left of us lay a pleasant, well-cultivated chain of hills, planted with beans, maize, mandiocca roots, and tobacco. On the right, the broad valley extends to the chain of Serra do

Mantiqueira, and bearing scarcely any traces of culture, is covered with thick, low bushes of myrtles, cujawas, &c. a dreary and desolate prospect. Only the hope that thousands of happy people will one day inhabit this highly gifted country can cheer the mind of the traveller. After proceeding a mile, we reached the shrine of Nossa Senhora Apparecida, a chapel situated on an eminence, with a few houses about it. It was erected about seventy years ago, a long period in this country; it is partly built of stone, and adorned with gilding, bad paintings in fresco, and some in oil. The wonder-working image of the Virgin attracts many pilgrims from the whole province, and from Minas. We met many of these pilgrims when we proceeded on our journey on Christmas eve. Every body here, women as well as men, travels on mules or on horseback; frequently the man takes the woman behind him on the same saddle. The dress of these planters is quite adapted to their local situation: a brown beaver hat with a very broad brim, which serves, at the same time, as a protection against the sun and the rain; a long, very wide blue frock (*poncho*), with a hole at the top for the head; jacket and trowsers, of dark calico; high unblacked boots, fastened below the knee with a leathern strap and buckle; a long knife with a silver handle, which serves as a defence, and sticks either in the boot at the knee, or in the girdle, and is used at meals as well as on other occasions, are the chief characteristics of a travelling Paulista. The women wear long, wide surtouts of cloth, and round hats."

A wretched *rancho* at As Taibas was their lodging at night. The next day, the eighteenth from leaving Rio, the travellers continued their journey in a S.S.W. direction to Pendamhongaba, or Pindamonhangaba, a town consisting of a church and some rows of low huts scattered on a hill. In their way, they crossed the three mountain streams of Parapitinga, Agoa Preta, and Ribeirão da

Villa. Three miles to the S. E. of Pendambongaba, is Thaubaté, one of the most important towns in the province, and rivalling the capital in antiquity. It is situated on a flat hill, and the Franciscan convent, surrounded by some rows of majestic palms, has an imposing appearance. The houses, however, are of the humblest description, seldom above one story high, *casas da taipa*, with a slight roof of pantiles and shingles. The interior, as described by Dr. Von Spix, corresponds to the slight construction and scanty materials. "The entrance, which is generally half or entirely closed by a latticed door, leads directly into the largest room in the house, which being without boards, and often with unwhitewashed walls, resembles a barn. This division serves for the habitation of the family. Store-rooms, and in some cases a side room for guests, occupy the remainder of the front of the building. The back part contains the apartments for the wife and the rest of the family, who, according to the Portuguese fashion, withdraw on the entrance of strangers. From this we enter the varanda, which generally runs along the whole length of the building, and opens into the court-yard. A similar varanda is sometimes annexed to the front of the house. The kitchen and servants' apartments, generally miserable sheds, lie opposite the house at the further end of the court. The furniture of these houses is confined to the most necessary articles. Often they have no more than a few wooden benches and chairs, a table, a large chest, and a bed consisting of a straw mat, or an ox-hide, on boards supported by four pegs. Instead of beds, the Brazilians almost always make use of the woven or braided hammocks (*marqueiras*), the best and most durable of which are manufactured in the provinces of St. Paulo and Minas, of white or coloured cotton. The traveller no where meets with any wells, and must there-

fore be satisfied with rain, spring, or river water, for every purpose."

Besides the Franciscan convent, Thaubaté contains, according to Cazal, a church dedicated to St. Francis, a convent of the Terceira order, and chapels of Our Lady of Pilar and Rosario. It is reckoned upwards of 100 miles N. E. of St. Paulo, seventy from Mugi das Cruzes, forty from Jacarehy, and three from the Paraïba, near a small stream. In former times, when the thirst for gold was at its height among the Paulistas, a government establishment for refining gold was founded here; and the rivalry between the *Taubatenos* and the Paulistas of Piratininga, rose to the pitch of a rancorous and implacable feud; so that whenever the two parties met in any of their excursions, sanguinary contests always ensued. "This enmity," says Dr. V. Spix, "is said still to continue in silence, though the inhabitants of Taubaté have now entirely renounced the occupation of gold-washing in other provinces, and follow agriculture and breeding of cattle in their own country, which is quite destitute of the precious metal." The women manufacture mats and hand-baskets of grass, which are sent to Rio. A few vines are also cultivated here, and the fruit is of an agreeable flavour.

Two days, journeying further south through verdant plains alternating with low woods, brought the travellers again to the banks of the Paraïba, where, at the town of Jacarehy (crocodile river), it bends round to the north. In their way they passed the vendas of Campo Grande, Sahida do Campo, and Paranangaba, and the small village of St. Joze. At Jacarehy, an endemic swelling of the glands of the neck is very prevalent, to a degree surpassing any thing found in Europe. These enormous goitres, frequently covering the whole neck, give a horrid appearance to the natives, who are, for the most part,

mulattoes; yet, they are regarded here, Dr. V. Spix says, as a beauty rather than a deformity. He attributes them to the marshy exhalations of the low valley of the Paraïba, which is often covered with fogs, the muddy, lukewarm water of the river, which supplies the place of spring water, and the uncleanliness of the people. As a remedy, at the commencement of the disease, it is customary to drink water which has stood for several days upon the pounded mass of large ant-hills. The negroes use gum-arabic with good success. Twelve miles to the S. of this place, is the Indian aldeia da Escada, and near it, a large Carmelite convent close to the Paraïba, which Dr. V. Spix found abandoned. The Indians in these parts are characterised by a deformity and ugliness, and a gloomy stupidity, which seem to indicate a degenerated race. This traveller describes a very singular race of mestizoes, several families of which he also met with in this district. They are called, he says, Cafusoes. "Their external appearance is one of the strangest that a European can meet with. They are slender and muscular; in particular, the muscles of the breast and arms are very strong; the feet, on the contrary, in proportion, weaker. Their colour is a dark copper, or coffee-brown. Their features, on the whole, have more of the Ethiopic than of the American race. The countenance is oval, the cheek-bones high, but not so broad as in the Indians; the nose broad and flattened, but neither turned up nor much bent; the mouth broad, with thick but equal lips, which, as well as the lower jaw, project but little; the black eyes have a more open and freer look than in the Indians, yet are still a little oblique, if not standing so much inward as in them, on the other hand, not turned outwards as in the Ethiopians. But what gives these mestizoes a peculiarly striking appearance, is the excessively long hair of the

head, which, especially at the end, is half curled, and rises almost perpendicularly from the forehead to the height of a foot, or a foot and a half, thus forming a prodigious and very ugly kind of peruke. This strange head of hair, which, at first sight, seems more artificial than natural, and almost puts one in mind of the *plica Polonica*, is not a disease, but merely a consequence of their mixed descent, and is the mean between the wool of the negro and the long, stiff hair of the American. This natural peruke is often so high, that the wearers must stoop low to go in and out of the usual doors of their huts; the thick hair is, besides, so entangled, that all idea of combing it is out of the question. This conformation of the hair gives the Cafusoes a resemblance to the Papuas in New Guinea."

The low mountains at Escada are the last branches of the Serra do Mar. The road descends considerably to Mugi das Cruzes, a considerable town, about two miles beyond the river Tieté, one of the tributaries of the Parana. Here are a church and three religious establishments. The inhabitants are chiefly graziers; but coffee and sugar are cultivated to some extent. It is thirty-five miles E. N. E. of St. Paulo, forty N. of Santos. The twenty-fourth day after leaving Rio, (the seventh from Thaubaté,) the travellers entered the capital.

GOLD MINES OF JARAGUA.

Beyond the plain which nearly encircles St. Paulo, the country is mountainous. About twenty-four miles from the city are the gold mines of Jaragua, the first discovered in this country, and which, on account of the immense treasures they produced a hundred years ago, occasioned this district to be regarded as the Peru of Brazil.

After being for some time abandoned, the gold-washing had recently been resumed, at the period of Dr. V. Spix's visit, by the proprietor of the mountain. Mr. Mawe visited the mines in 1807. On the banks of the Tiete, which he crossed, he observed "some situations truly enviable," rich tracts of teeming soil, under a genial climate, wholly neglected and solitary. The mountain of Jaragua is one of the most southern branches of the Serra do Mantiqueira, which, after running for more than fifty miles to the north, disappears in this latitude. The rock is granite, sometimes gneiss, containing a portion of hornblende with mica. The earth washed for gold, Dr. V. Spix describes as "a ferruginous sand-stone conglomerate;" which agrees with Mr. Mawe's account. "The soil," he says, "is red and remarkably ferruginous. The gold lies, for the most part, in a *stratum* of rounded pebbles and gravel, called *cascalhão*, incumbent on the solid rock. In the valleys, where there is water, occur frequent excavations, made by the gold-washers, some of them fifty or a hundred feet wide, and eighteen or twenty feet deep. On many of the hills, where water can be collected for washing, particles of gold are found in the soil, scarcely deeper than the roots of the grass."

The mode of obtaining the gold, Mr. Mawe thus describes. "Where water of sufficiently high level can be commanded, the ground is cut in steps, each twenty or thirty feet wide, two or three broad, and about one deep. Near the bottom, a trench is cut to the depth of two or three feet. On each step stand six or eight negroes, who, as the water flows gently from above, keep the earth continually in motion with shovels, until the whole is reduced to liquid mud, and washed below. The particles of gold contained in this earth descend to the trench, where, by reason of their specific gravity, they quickly precipitate. Workmen are continually employed at the

trench to remove the stones, and clear away the surface, which operation is much assisted by the current of water which falls into it. After five days' washing, the precipitation in the trench is carried to some convenient stream to undergo a second clearance. For this purpose, wooden bowls are provided, of a funnel shape, about two feet wide at the mouth, and five or six inches deep, called *gamellas*. Each workman, standing in the stream, takes into his bowl five or six pounds weight of the sediment, which generally consists of heavy matter, such as granular oxide of iron, pyrites, feruginous quartz, &c. and often precious stones. They admit certain quantities of water into the bowls, which they move about so dexterously, that the precious metal, separating from the inferior and lighter substances, settles to the bottom and sides of the vessel. They then rinse their bowls in a larger vessel of clean water, leaving the gold in it, and begin again. The washing of each bowl-ful occupies from five to eight or nine minutes. The gold produced is extremely variable in quality and in the size of its particles, some of which are so minute that they float, while others are found as large as peas, and, not unfrequently, much larger. This operation is superintended by overseers, as the result is of considerable importance. When the whole is finished, the gold is placed upon a brass pan, over a slow fire, to be dried, and at a convenient time, is taken to the Permutation-office, where it is weighed, and a fifth is reserved for the crown. The remainder is smelted with muriate of mercury, then cast into ingots, assayed, and stamped according to its intrinsic value, a certificate of which is given with it. After a copy of that instrument has been duly entered at the Mint-office, the ingots circulate as specie." *

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 108—10.

IRON MINES OF YPANEMA.

About twenty leagues from the city, in the mountain of Guarassojava, there are vast mines of magnetic iron-stone. A royal foundery has been erected on the banks of the Ypanema (or Hipannema), round which has grown up a small village. The mines, though known to exist, had not been regularly worked till 1810, when the Conde de Linhares brought here a company of Swedish miners, who began by erecting a wooden workshop on the banks of the river, in which they had two small furnaces. Under the administration of the Conde da Palma, the establishment was put on a more respectable footing; and a handsome and extensive edifice had just been completed, when Dr. Von Spix visited Ypanema in January 1818, which was to be placed under the superintendence of Lieut.-Colonel Varnhagen, and founders were expected to arrive from Germany. A hospital for the sick workmen had also been erected, which was attended by two surgeons. The only difficulty anticipated by Dr. Von Spix in extending the manufactory, was the future want of proper wood for fuel, when the neighbouring forests should be exhausted. The ore appeared good, containing partly ninety per cent. "Yet we frequently heard complaints," he adds, "that the iron extracted from it was too brittle, and that many instruments made of it were not durable. When the best method of treating the ore, especially in the operation of refining, is discovered, and the exportation is facilitated by making a good road or canal to the coast, Ypanema, with its incredible abundance in iron ore, will be able to supply not only Brazil, but all the rest of the American continent, with that metal."

The road to the foundery leads S.S.W. from St. Paulo, over a hilly and partly cultivated country, having the

mountain of Jaragua on the right. From Jacarehy, the road gradually ascends, and passing the parish of Cutia, and the village of S. Roque, leads to the villa of Sorocaba, distant sixty miles west from St. Paulo. This agreeable and flourishing town lies on the small river of the same name, which flows into the Tiete to the west of it. The population is stated by Cazal to comprise 1777 families, two thirds of whom are whites: they breed cattle and ponies, and cultivate cotton, sugar, and Indian corn. It contains a church, an *hospicio* of Benedictines, a hermitage of St. Antonio, and a recolhimento of women. This place is a great thoroughfare and market for mules from Rio Grande do Sul, above 30,000 of which, it is calculated, annually pass through Sorocaba. A duty of from 1280 to 2000 rees (7*s.* to 11*s.* 6*d.*) per head is paid to the crown on their entrance into the new capitania; and as this is repeated with certain modifications on the frontiers of every province, the price of these animals, which is here from twelve to twenty-five piastres, becomes doubled and trebled by the time they reach Bahia, Pernambuco, and Seara. Its lying on the road to Ypanema, distant only two leagues, or about seven miles, will tend to render it still more considerable. It is in the comarca of Hitu.

St. Joâo de Ypanema is seated on an amphitheatrical eminence on the banks of the river of the same name, which here spreads out into a lake. "Beautiful plains form the foreground, and the iron mountain of Guarassojava * covered with a dark wood, which, on the north-west side, descends into the valley, makes the background of the landscape. The neatly whitewashed houses, which lie scattered along the hill, at the foot of which stand the extensive buildings of the manufactory, and the expression

* The word signifies *sun-shader*, in allusion to the great extent of land obscured by its shade.

of noisy activity and industry which reign here, seem to transport the European into some manufactory in a beautiful, wild district of his own country."

"The mountain," continues Dr. V. Spix, "which produces this extraordinary quantity of ore, rises behind the place, a quarter of a mile to the west, and extends, as a rather insulated mountain ridge, a league in length from south to north. The elevation above the Ypanema is about 1000 feet. It is almost every where covered with thick woods, from which, in the morning and evening, are heard the noisy howls of the brown monkeys. We ascended it, taking the narrow road through the bushes, by which the mules bring the ore to the manufactory. After we had gone winding up the mountain for a short way through thick wood, we found ourselves all at once before some gigantic rocks of magnetic iron-stone, which rise almost perpendicularly to the height of forty feet and more. Around them, partly upon, and partly under the surface of the ground, which is a very rich mould, lie innumerable loose pieces, from the size of a fist to considerable blocks. The surface of the masses of rock is almost every where flat and even, with slight depressions and cavities, and has a crust of imperfectly oxydated iron-stone, which is some lines thick. We did not observe that the great masses caused any motion in a suspended needle; but small pieces, especially when just struck off, had a considerable effect on it. The mass of this magnetic iron-stone is either quite compact or traversed by veins of red ochre. This iron-stone appears to be in immediate contact with a yellow quartzy sand-stone, with an argillaceous cement: at least, the latter is seen in several places at the foot of the mountain, as well as in Ypanema itself. A dirty lavender-blue primitive clay-slate, tinged brown in the rifts, which runs from east to west, lies on the top of the mountain, here and there, over the iron.

Upon the *Morro de Guarassojava*, and probably in veins of the magnetic iron-stone, there is a porous quartz-stone of a light-brown colour, the cavities in which are covered with a bluish-white chalcedony, with a crystallised surface." *

Dr. Von Spix states, that in no part of Brazil are there so many melancholic and hysteric patients as here, for which he is at a loss to assign any better reason, than their almost exclusive use of a coarsely-ground maize flour, rarely baked into bread or cakes, but either brought to table in little baskets, or boiled with water and milk, and sweetened, when it is called *canjica*. This diet, the German physician pronounces to be difficult of digestion. He hints, however, at a far more likely cause of such complaints, in remarking, that by far the greater part of the diseases which he observed here, were "of syphilitic origin."

ROUTE TO THE FRONTIER OF MINAS GERAES.

From Ypanema, the travellers proceeded to the Villa do Porto Feliz, on the river Tieté, distant five leagues and a half, in a north-westerly direction, 25 miles N. N.W. of Sorocaba, and 18 W. of Hitu. In the road, which lay over hilly campos, and through low woody tracts, they did not observe a single house. The Tieté, having been joined by the Rio dos Pinheiros, the Jundiahy, the Capibary, and other small streams, is here from twelve to fifteen fathoms broad, and runs southward between rocky banks, covered with thick forests. Its Indian name is Anhemby. Close to the port, which is nothing more than a creek, a rocky wall rises to the height of forty or fifty feet, called

* Von Spix, vol. ii. pp. 51-2.

by the natives *Arara-ita-guaba*, i. e. the place where the *araras* (birds so called) eat stones: this was the former name of the town. The surface of the sand-stone rocks is covered with a fine yellowish grey marl, which exhibits an efflorescent white salt; and after the end of the rainy season, the birds are said to flock hither to rub off and lick up the saline efflorescence. In the hotter parts of Brazil, where the surface of the earth presents extensive tracts covered with salt, particularly salt-petre, it is no unusual circumstance for animals to be observed licking the ground. The walls of the low houses at Porto Feliz are often covered with the same substance, deposited by the thick fogs which prevail here, causing, we are told, goitres, intermittent fevers, dropsy, and an almost endemic catarrh. Maize and rice thrive from the same cause that renders the place unhealthy, and generally produce here two hundred and fifty fold. The sugar-cane is also cultivated, but the breeding of cattle is the principal occupation of the inhabitants. From the Rio Ypanema, grassy campos extend southward with little interruption to Curitiba, and into the capitania of Rio Grande, in the whole of which extensive tract the same system of farming is followed, that is described by Dr. Von Spix in the following terms.

"Every landholder possesses, according to the extent of his farm, from several hundred to two thousand, nay, even forty thousand head of cattle. They generally reckon from three to four thousand head on an estate which has two square miles of good pasture. All these roam at liberty in a wild state; but, every farmer keeps besides, as many tame draught oxen and cows as he requires for the purposes of agriculture and for milk, which is partly made into cheese. The attendance on the wild cattle gives but very little trouble: all that is required is, to brand them with the mark of the owner, and to catch the animals intended to be slaughtered. From four to six servants, under the

direction of a chief cowherd, perform all these services; they prevent the herds from straying beyond the boundaries, and defend them from the attacks of the ounces, wolves, and wild dogs. These people are almost always on horseback, as their office compels them to ride twenty miles or more in a day. Every year, the whole herd is collected at different times in a place in a high situation, and sometimes fenced in. On this occasion, the mark of the owner is branded on the hind quarter of the beasts one year old, of which they reckon a thousand annually for a herd of five or six thousand. Those of four years old and more, are selected for slaughter. The catching of these, frequently a troublesome and dangerous employment, is executed here, as in the *pampas* of Buenos Ayres, by means of long leathern nooses, which the farmers' servants manage with incredible dexterity.* The tame cattle are kept in the vicinity of the fazenda, run free in the meadows during the day, and are only shut up in the enclosures during the night. The flesh of the tame cattle is preferred to that of the wild, because, from their undisturbed and more quiet way of life, they grow fat sooner, and with less fodder. The pasture being so good, their milk is excellent; but a cow gives only a third part of the quantity that good milch cows give in Europe. The hide is always the most valuable part of the cattle: it is stripped off, stretched upon the ground by means of short pegs, a little salted, and dried in the sun. The flesh, cut into thin strips, rubbed with salt, and dried in the air, is an im-

* Mr. Mawe, describing this process as practised by the peons of Monte Video, says: "The dexterous mode in which the peons catch their cattle, by throwing a noose over them, has been frequently detailed, but certainly no description can do full justice to their agility. They throw with equal precision and effect, whether at full gallop or at rest. Their method of catching horses, by means of balls attached to leather thongs, is similar, but more unerring." —*Travels in Brazil*, p. 29.

portant article of exportation from the harbours of St. Paulo and Rio Grande do Sul, to the cities in the north; particularly to Rio de Janeiro, Bahia, Pernambuco, and Maranham, where, under the names of *Carne seca do Sertâo*, *Passoca*, or *Carne charqueda*, it constitutes an essential part of the subsistence of all the Brazilians, but especially of the negro slaves.

"Besides the breeding of oxen, that of horses and mules likewise occupies several farmers in the capitania of St. Paulo, but is carried on upon a far more extensive scale in Rio Grande do Sul. The horses of St. Paulo are of a middling size, of slender make, and, if they are attended with care, acquire an elegant carriage, and become excellent racers. In general, twenty or thirty of those wild animals herd together, and hardly ever separate. The animals, when taken (by means of the long nooses), sometimes trembling with fear, sometimes full of impetuous fury, endeavour, by the strongest contortions and the most desperate leaps, to defend themselves against the riders. When the latter have succeeded in holding an animal fast by the ears and lips with a pair of tongs, in putting a halter over his head, and a sheep-skin by way of saddle on his back, one of the servants mounts him, and endeavours to overcome the obstinacy of the horse by means of the whip. After many violent motions and leaps, it is at length so far subdued, that it runs furiously away with its rider, and after a long course, it in some degree yields to the bridle. After being thus humbled, it stands still with its head hanging down, on which all the others separate from it. The next day, the same exercise is repeated; and in a few days more, the horse is broken and fit for riding. The common Paulistas, and particularly the *Piâos* (the herdsman's servants), make use of a very small flat, wooden, saddle, which is often not even covered with leather. Their stirrups are so small that they will only admit the great toe: the

spurs are fastened to the naked heel. The dress of the *Piâo* consists of a short jacket, narrow trowsers, and a flat, round hat fastened with a strap, altogether of brown leather, made of deer or capivara hides, and is very well adapted to protect him against the thorny hedges through which he must force his way, when pursuing wild animals.

"The wild horses are most frequently of a brown colour, very rarely white or piebald, and by their disproportionably short, thick heads and small stature, generally betray their extra-European breed. The mules are here more handsomely made animals than the horses: they are commonly equal in size to the European horse; their colours are black, brown, fallow, or striped like a zebra. They are preferable to the horses, especially on long journeys, because they can better endure hunger and thirst, and carry with greater security heavier burdens." *

It was from Porto Feliz that the Paulistas set out upon their first expedition to explore the interior in search of gold. Ascending the Tieté to the Parana, they passed from that into the Rio Pardo, and traced it up to one of its principal sources, the waters of the Sanguexuga. Exploring the country, they passed the limit of the waters of the Serra de Camapuâo, reached the sources of the Embotatay, which they descended till they entered at last the broad stream of the Paraguay. Following this route, Antonio Pires de Campos, in 1718, discovered the gold mines of Cuiaba, in Matto Grosso. The villages which soon sprang up in this new El Dorado, were long absolutely dependent on St. Paulo for the supply of the necessaries of life, nothing being attended to by the colonists but gold-washing; and, as the way down the Tieté was the only one known, all commodities were conveyed by it

* Von Spix, vol. ii. pp. 80—84.

into the interior. In the year 1736, a way by land was first opened from Goyaz. In 1742, a communication was ascertained between Cuiaba and Para by means of the Amazons river and its tributaries. It was many years later that the way by land became more used, and that the tedious and dangerous navigation of the Tieté was gradually abandoned. At present, not more than from six to ten boats go annually from Porto Feliz to Cuiaba. Though the mouth of the Tieté is only five-and-forty leagues distant, in a straight line, the boatmen estimate the route they are obliged to take at 130 leagues. The river is full of violent currents, rocks, and waterfalls, thirteen of which cannot be passed without landing half the cargo, and still greater obstacles have afterwards to be surmounted in pursuing this intricate navigation.

Hitu or Ytu, the chief town of the comarca to which it gives name, is six leagues N. W. of Sorocaba.* Except two small hamlets of inconsiderable houses, in a beautiful and flowery plain, there are scarcely any traces of cultivation in the intermediate route. The town is situated at the foot of the hills, and is excessively hot in the summer months: it consists of several rows of small, regularly-built houses of taipa, and contains, for its size, rather more than the usual complement of religious edifices; a church of our Lady, a Franciscan convent, an *hospicio* of slippered Carmelites, an hospital and hermitage of Lazarists, and several others. Some of the streets are paved with large slabs of a bluish grey, compact lime-stone. The soil in the neighbourhood is said to be peculiarly adapted to the culture of the sugar-cane.

From this town, there is a high road to Villa Rica, in

* According to Dr. Von Spix. Mr. Henderson says (following Cazal), 25 miles N. N. E. of Sorocaba, 60 W. N. W. of St. Paulo, and two from the large fall of the Tieté, from which its name is derived.

Minas Geraes: the route is described by Dr. Von Spix, who, with his companions, performed the journey in just a month: we shall pursue them to the frontier. Soon after crossing the wooden bridge over the Tieté, the road ascends the mountains, and passes through a savage and solitary tract of country. The first night, they reached some miserable huts called Jacaré: the next day brought them to the small villa of Jundiahi, (so named from the *jundia* fish with which the stream abounds,) distant, according to Cazal, 35 miles E. N. E. of Hitu, and the same distance N. N. W. of St. Paulo. All the *tropas* (caravans) proceeding from St. Paulo to Minas, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso, are here "organised" for this long expedition. Large herds of mules are kept by the inhabitants, who perform this journey several times a year. "The manufacture of pack-saddles, saddles, shoes, and every thing necessary for the equipment of the caravans, gives the place," Dr. Von Spix says, "an appearance of activity and prosperity, and justly acquires for it the name of a land-port (*porto seco*). Paved roads lead from this place to the above-mentioned provinces. The journey to Villa Boa de Goyaz is completed in one month; that to Cuiaba in two months." The inhabitants turn to good account the passage of the caravans, by supplying them also with provisions. The road to Minas continues to ascend, till it reaches the highest point of the ridge, the *Morro de Catetuva:* it then descends into a broad valley, which, near the poor village of S. Joâo de Atibaya, expands into an open country, reckoned peculiarly healthy, and peopled with a robust race. Another chain of granite mountains has now to be ascended. Boa Vista (Fine Prospect), the highest point of the road, is conjectured to be about 2500 feet high. The Morro de Lopo towers above the whole range, clad with sombre forests. Except a few wretched huts, inhabited by mamelucoes, there are no traces of man

in this solitary region. Two short stages from Atibaya, a custom-house at the foot of a mountain marks the frontier of the capitania. It is formed by high mountains, for the most part covered with thick wood, through which only a few by-roads, impassable a great part of the year, lead into the interior.

Of the southern part of the province, forming the comarca of Curitiba and Paranagua, we have no account beyond the meagre statistical details of Cazal. It has hitherto been unvisited by European travellers. Along the coast, it is for the most part mountainous. Inland, there are said to extend beautiful and salubrious *campos*. Mr. Mawe, who sailed along the coast, speaks of these elevated plains, apparently from the information he received, as "the finest district in that country, and indeed, one of the finest in the world in point of climate. The ridge of mountains (on the coast) is," he says, "more than 4000 feet above the level of the sea; and there is a regular ascent for twenty leagues from their inland base to Coritiva (Curitiba). On this fertile tract are fed large herds of cattle: here also are bred mules in great numbers. Its soil and air are so genial, that olives, grapes, apples, peaches, and other fruits, grow to as rich a maturity as in Europe, though they are here almost in a wild state." This is not quite accurate, as neither the vine nor the olive has yet been naturalised. It is probably more correct, that "from its great elevation, the climate of Coritiva is peculiarly congenial to Europeans." "Coritiva," adds Mr. Mawe, "is not reported to contain gold or diamonds, yet, both these valuable products are found in some parts of the district; a fact known to but few persons, who have profited greatly by keeping it secret. This fine country, therefore, offers few attractions to the great mass of emigrants to Brazil, who are commonly tempted by the very name of

gold mines to settle in them, or are allured by the profits accruing from plantations of cotton, sugar, or coffee, and look with indifference on the pursuits of what is termed common agriculture." The Rio Tibagy, which has its source to the west of Cannanea, running to the N.W., and traversing the campos of Guarapuaba, is stated by this traveller to be rich in diamonds, "as the few good families in its vicinity have reason to remember with gratitude; and the Rio Verde" (which we do not find mentioned by Henderson) produces, he says, gold. "More to the westward, it is dangerous to travel, since in that direction live the Anthropophagi, who were driven from these boundaries a few years ago."* Curitiba, the head town, and the residence of the *ouvidor*, is stated to have a magnificent church; all its structures are of stone or brick, and the streets are paved. Paranagua, which, prior to 1812, was the seat of the provincial magistracy, is also built of stone, but is described as an unpleasant and unhealthy place. It is about ten miles distant from the sea, upon the southern bank of the river from which it borrows its name. The other villas of this comarca are, Villa Nova de St. Luiz (or Guaratuba), seven miles from the sea; Antonio, ten miles W. of Paranagua, at the extremity of the bay, created a town in 1800; Cannanea, situated on a small island, about ten miles within the bar of the river of the same name;† Iguape; Castro; St. Joze; Lages, otherwise Nossa Senhora dos Prazeres, the most southern town in the province, and much infested by the savages; and Villa do Principe, originally St. Antonio do Lapa.

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 73—76.

† "At the entrance of the bay of Cannanea, there is a stone of European marble with the royal arms of Portugal, which, although much defaced, is ascertained to have been erected there in the year 1503."—*Henderson's Brazil*, p. 177. To this work we are indebted for the above details.

Curitibi (properly Curutiba), the name of this district, derived from *curu*, pine, and *tiba*, many, has originated in the extensive pine forests which are found here; the cedar also is said to be common in many parts. These forests abound with the mountain-hog, herds of which may be met with, to the number, sometimes, of a hundred or more. The fruit-trees of Europe, the fig, the pear, the apple, the peach, the plum, the quince, the cherry, the walnut, and the chestnut, are all found to prosper in the southern part of the province. The olive blossoms, but is rarely known to fructify. Grapes are produced in bunches sometimes of five pounds weight, but hitherto no good wine has been manufactured. The Curitibanoes pass for the most robust people among the Paulistas. They are employed chiefly in breeding cattle, horses, and mules, but cultivate wheat, maize, and a little rice, and make some butter and cheese. Mandioc, the banana, coffee, cotton, and the sugar-cane, prosper only in certain situations.

The river Sahy Grande, dividing this province from St. Catharina, forms the limit of its coast towards the south. Eighteen miles to the northward is the mouth of the rapid Guaratuba; so named from the beautiful bird, the guara, which abounds upon its margin, and breeds upon a flat island, covered with mangroves, about seven miles from the sea, where, by a decree, all persons are prohibited from destroying them.* Launches proceed up this river to St. Luiz. Twenty miles further northward, are the three entrances to the bay of Paranagua, formed

* "The Guara, one of the handsomest birds that frequent the morasses, has the body similar to a partridge, a long neck and legs, the bill long and a little curved, and without a tail. The first feathers are white; after a short time they turn black, and finally scarlet, preserving the second colour at the extremity of the wings." —*Henderson*, p. 511.

by the two islands Mel and Pecas. The bay is twenty miles from east to west, more than ten at its greatest width, but of very irregular form. A great number of small streams discharge into it. It encloses an island named Cotinga, six miles long; but small craft only can enter it. Twenty-five miles further, the shallow Araripira disembogues, scarcely affording depth of water enough for canoes. Twelve miles to the north-east is the bar of Cannanea, with a small island of the same name near its northern point; and in front of it, on the southern side, that of Figueira. What is called the bar of Cannanea is, in fact, the southern mouth of an inlet of the sea, of which the bar of Icapara, forty miles further north-east, is the northern mouth. The intervening land is a flat island of inconsiderable width, hitherto unnamed and thinly inhabited: the channel which separates it from the continent, is narrow and deep. Smacks enter by the southern bar: the other, though of the same depth, is not navigated, owing to its dangerous windings. Fifteen miles further along the coast is the mouth of the Iguape, which is navigable for many leagues. Thirty-five miles further are the two mouths of the river Una, up which canoes proceed more than fifty miles to a place called Prelado. Forty miles to the north-east is the entrance of the handsome bay of the Itanhaen, on the northern margin of which is a small place of the same name, created a town in 1561: some farinha, rice, and timber are exported from this place, which has a Franciscan convent. It belongs to the comarca of St. Paulo. The bay of Santos, already described, follows at a distance of thirty-five miles. It is the only port of the province capable of receiving large vessels.

Pursuing our plan of tracing the coast, before we explore the back country, the next maritime province, southward, is that of

SANTA CATHARINA.

This province, formerly a portion of St. Paulo, from which it was separated when the latter received the addition of a part of St. Amaro and St. Vincente, is the smallest in Brazil. It comprehends the island from which it takes its name, and a territory of sixty leagues in length from north to south on the neighbouring continent, reckoning from the Sahy Grande, which separates it from St. Paulo on the north, to the Mampituba, which divides it from Rio Grande on the south. On the west, the heads of the Cordillera divide it from the same provinces; its greatest width not exceeding twenty leagues. The greater part of the old capitania of St. Amaro is included within these limits, which extend from 25° 50′ to 29° 20′ south latitude.

A period of one hundred and twenty years elapsed from the time that Brazil was first distributed into captaincies, before any colonists were established in the island of St. Catharina, which then bore the name of *Ilha dos Patos*. In 1654, King John IV. granted it to Francisco Diaz Velho: but, soon after his arrival, he was assassinated by an English pirate, and the island remained in its primitive state. Eventually, the province was colonised by families from the Azores, at the cost of the crown, from whom the greater part of the present population are descended. Negroes are not numerous, and mestizoes still less so. The aboriginal Patoes retreated into the mountains of the continent.

"The island of St. Catharina," Mr. Southey states, "was, in the year 1712, still covered with evergreen woods, except in the little bays and creeks opposite the main-land, where some fourteen or fifteen spots had been cleared round the habitations of the settlers. These co-

lonists were chiefly bad subjects, who had fled from other captaincies, and were described by a Portuguese officer, as a people that knew no king. With such people, the Portuguese government has always dealt politicly; contenting itself with the slightest recognition of its authority at first, and gradually assuming and exerting power as they became more numerous, fell naturally into the habits of regular life, and consequently felt the necessity of subordination. At that time, a captain had the nominal command, who was appointed by the commander of Laguna,—a little town on the continent, some few leagues to the south. There were within his jurisdiction, one hundred and forty-seven whites, a few blacks, and a few Indians, some of whom were prisoners taken in war, and treated as slaves, and others came voluntarily, to better their condition by living with the Portuguese. The ordinary dress consisted of only a shirt and drawers: he who added to this a jacket and a hat, was a magnificent person. Shoes and stockings were seldom seen; but when they went into the woods, they put on leggings, made of jaguar-skin, in one whole piece, tranferred from the legs of the wild beast to their own. The jaguars at that time were so numerous, even upon the island, that a great many dogs were kept to protect the houses. During some thirty years, foreign ships were well entertained there: the inhabitants allowed them to lay in wood and water, and gladly supplied them with provisions, in exchange for European goods. Money they would not receive in payment, because they had no use for it. But when Commodore Anson touched there, in 1740, the place having become of more consequence, and the authority of the government being increased in proportion, the inhospitable system established in other parts of Brazil, had been introduced there also. A great contraband trade was then carried on from this island with the Plata, the

Portuguese exchanging gold for silver, by which traffic both sovereigns were defrauded of their fifths. Fortifications were then being erected. In 1749, the population of St. Catharina had increased to four thousand one hundred and ninety-seven; but, about the end of the century, several thousands were carried off by a contagious disease, which appears to have been dysentery, attended with putrid fever."

In 1796, this province was computed to contain 4246 *fogos* (houses), and 23,865 adult inhabitants exclusive of paid troops. In 1812, the population, according to Cazal, amounted to 31,530. The province has three towns,—Nossa Senhora do Desterro on the island of St. Catharina, St. Francisco on the island of the same name, and Laguna on the continent; and seven freguezias or parishes,—three on the island, and four on the continent. The whole are included within the see of Rio de Janeiro.

Mr. Mawe touched at St. Catherine's in his voyage from Monte Video to Santos in Sept. 1807. He sailed on the 11th; on the 29th, he made the island at sunrise, and was delighted with the grand and picturesque aspect of its conical rocks rising abruptly from the sea, with the lofty, wooded mountains of the continent in the background. "This sublime scenery interested us," he says, "the more from the contrast it formed to the extensive, woodless plains of Buenos Ayres." He makes the island to be situated in lat. 27° 29′ south.

"Entering the port of St. Catherine's by the north," he continues, "we passed several islands, on one of which, westward of the entrance, stands the respectable port of Santa Cruz. After running a few miles in shoal water, we sailed into a narrow passage, guarded by two forts, which form the harbour. From the anchorage, and more particularly from the landing-place, which is at the bottom of a verdant slope of about five hundred yards,

the town has a most beautiful appearance, and the perspective is nobly crowned by its fine cathedral. The green is interspersed with orange-trees, and forms an agreeable parade. Immediately on entering the town, we discerned in its general appearance, and in the manners of its inhabitants, a striking superiority over those which we had of late visited. The houses are well built, have two or three stories, with boarded floors, and are provided with neat gardens, well stocked with excellent vegetables and flowers. The town consists of several streets, and may contain from 5 to 6000 inhabitants. It is a free port." Besides the church of Nossa Senhora do Desterro, which gives name to the capital, it contains two chapels, a convent, an hospicio, and good barracks. "The houses," Cazal says, "are either of stone or wood. The senate is presided by a *juiz de fora*, and the youth are instructed by royal masters in the primitive letters and Latin, for whose benefit there is a tribute in rum!" The inhabitants manufacture coarse linen * and cotton goods, and a cloth consisting of a mixture of both. The excellent red clay which the island affords, is also manufactured into jars, large water-pots, and culinary vessels, large quantities of which are exported both to Rio and to the Plata. "The trade of this place, however," Mr. Mawe says, "is inconsiderable, as the produce does not much exceed the consumption of the inhabitants, who are in general far from rich. It affords an agreeable retirement to merchants who have discontinued business, masters of ships who have left off going to sea, and other persons, who, having secured an independence, seek only leisure to enjoy it. Few places are better calculated for such a purpose than this; it is enlivened by the nu-

* "Flax is grown here of a very fair quality, of which the fishermen make their lines, nets, and cordage."

merous coasting-vessels from Bahia, Pernambuco, and other ports, bound for the Plata, which frequently touch here; and it is amply provided with artisans of all descriptions, such as tailors, shoemakers, tin-workers, joiners, and smiths. The inhabitants in general are very civil and courteous to strangers. The ladies are handsome and very lively: their chief employment is making lace, in which they display great ingenuity and taste."

Mr. Luccock gives a less pleasing account of the state of society here. "The island enjoys," he says, "a very agreeable climate, and is accounted a cheap place of residence. On this account, an English family, with straitened finances, settled here; but, though attaining their first object, they were, on the whole, miserably disappointed. There are none of the most common accommodations. The habits of the people are disgustingly filthy, and their morals depraved. The opportunities and means of commerce were also at that period few, but have since become more abundant." *

All accounts, however, seem to agree as to the natural advantages of the island, and the desirableness of the station for a colony. The surface is singularly varied, presenting granite mountains, fertile plains, swamps fit for the growth of rice, lakes stocked with fish, and several small streams. Yet, the whole island is not much more than thirty miles in length from north to south, and from four to eight in width. One of the lakes, on the eastern side of the island, is two leagues in length. Mandioc and flax are the principal articles of agriculture, the sandy soil near the coast being adapted to the former of these; but wheat, as well as maize, is also grown here, and pulse in every part. Onions are abundant, and have credit for singular excellence. There are also plantations

* Notes, &c. p. 240.

of rice, sugar, and cotton, but the latter is of indifferent quality. To these productions are to be added indigo, water-melons, pine-apples, and, according to Mr. Mawe, "the finest oranges in the world."* "On contemplating the many natural advantages of this island," adds this traveller, "I could not but be struck with its importance, and was tempted to wish that it were annexed by treaty to the dominions of Great Britain. Emigrants might subsist here at a very cheap rate, and the isle is tenable against any force so long as we remain masters of the sea. Ships would trade to it from the western coast of America, and from the eastern coast of Africa; and in our hands, it would soon become an emporium of commerce. It is adapted to almost every variety of produce; the highlands are capable of cultivation, and the plains and valleys are fertile even to luxuriance. The climate is humid, but its general temperature is moderate and salubrious. If colonized by English, the isle might be a perfect Paradise." A report, it seems, at one time prevailed, and was very popular, that this island was to be ceded to the crown of Great Britain. By the treaty of 1810, it was, however, declared a free port to our trade, in which British merchants might settle and practise their religion without molestation.† When, in addition to the advantages which have been enumerated, it is considered, that the harbour is the best in Brazil, except only that of Rio de Janeiro,‡ it is remarkable that St. Catherine's should hitherto have been more neglected by the government than almost any other maritime part of Brazil, while

* Mr. Luccock says: "They are chiefly of the small red kind called Tangerinas, and though, beyond this point to the south, they do not flourish, are well flavoured."

† See page 56.

‡ Mr. Henderson terms it "one of the best in South America, and the key to the Southern Ocean."

it has always been a common resort of strangers of all nations.*

On the continent, opposite Desterro, (Mr. Henderson says four miles south-east of the capital,) stands the pleasant village of S. Joze, the inhabitants of which are stated by Mr. Mawe to be principally occupied in sawing timber into planks, making bricks, and growing rice. There is also a pottery here of glazed earthen-ware. "Near this village," he says, "is a lovely vale called Picada, thickly studded with white cottages embosomed in orange-groves and coffee-plantations. The gently sloping hills which enclose this spot, give a picturesque effect to the bold, rugged scenery beyond them. Proceeding northwards from St. Jose, we entered some fine bays, the shores of which were studded with houses, pleasantly situated, amid bananerias, orangeries, and plantations of rice, coffee, and mandioca. After having passed several well-peopled parishes, we arrived at Armaçâo, a village at the extremity of a bay" (that of St. Miguel), "about nine leagues distant from St. Jose, and four leagues north of Santa Cruz.† This village is a fishing station for whales, which were formerly very numerous on the coast, and in the bays that indent it. The fishery is farmed by Government to a company under the superintendence of a *capitam-mor* and a number of inferior

* So low was the value of land here in 1808, and so valuable money, that Mr. Mawe was offered an estate occupying a space of eighty-five fathoms along the beach, near St. Jose, and extending a mile inland, including a neat house and garden, orangeries, and well-watered plantations, for about 125*l.* sterling. About two miles from Desterro, a neat house with a small orangery and some cleared ground, was offered for sale at 100 dollars; and an excellent house in one of the best situations in the environs, with a garden of two acres tastefully planted, was offered for 400*l.* sterling.

† The "pleasant parish of St. Miguel," situated on the bay so called, which forms a good road-stead, is stated by Mr. Henderson to be but eight miles north-west of Desterro.

officers. About 150 negroes are employed on this station, but the number of whales now caught, is not so great as formerly, when the average was three or four hundred in a season. * Their conveniences for flinching or cutting up the fish, are extensive and well contrived. Several fine piers project from the shore into eighteen or twenty feet depth of water, on which are erected capstans, cranes, and other requisite machinery. Hither all the fish on the coast are brought. The boiling-house, tanks, &c. are far superior to any thing of the kind at Greenland Dock, and indeed, to all similar establishments in Europe. To give an idea of their magnitude, it is sufficient to say, that, in one range, there are twenty-seven very large boilers, and places for three more. Their tanks are vast vaults, on some of which a boat might be rowed with ease. We obtained a view of those great works through the civility of the commander of the place, Capitam Mor Jacinto Jorge dos Anjos, who lived there in a princely style, and possesses a very considerable property, which he diffuses with great public spirit and liberality."

Beyond the point of Armaçâo, is that of Dos Ganchos, forming the southern extremity of the spacious bay of Tejuco or Tejucas, into which a river of the same name discharges itself, fifty fathoms wide, and "affording two days' navigation." † Mr. Mawe crossed by a mountainous road of four leagues, the peninsula which forms the southern point of the bay. "The poor cottages of the people here," he says, "present a curious picture of rural irregularity. Some are built on the summit of conical mountains, the passage to which is frequently obstructed by clouds; others stand on the sides of gentle acclivities;

* "Forty years ago, they caught a whale a day, but they now (1808) catch only one in the course of a month."

† Henderson.

but the greater number of them are situated almost in contact with the ocean, which often flows to their very doors. The bay is from two to three leagues across, and extends about the same distance inland. It is well sheltered, and affords good anchorage, and fine situations for loading timber, with which the mountainous country around is thickly clothed, and large quantities of which are felled and embarked for Rio de Janeiro and the Plata. Canoes are made here at a cheaper rate and in greater numbers than in any other part of Brazil. Into this bay fall several streams, formed by the mountain torrents and springs, and two tolerable rivers, the less called Inferninho, and the larger Tigreno.* They both flow through low, swampy land, subject to inundation, and overgrown with mangroves and an immense variety of trees. The insalubrity of this tract might be corrected by clearing away the underwood and draining the soil; but the arduousness of such an undertaking might deter a more active and skilful people than this. In the rainy season, it is inundated to a great extent; and in summer, it is infested with terrible swarms of mosquitoes and burachala flies, which render it almost uninhabitable.

"Along the beach of this bay, I found the shell of the *murex* genus, which produces that beautiful crimson dye so valued by the ancients. It is here called *purpura*, and, to my great surprise, its use is in some degree known to the natives, one of whom shewed me some cotton fringe dyed with an extract of it, though ill prepared. The shell is about the size of a common whelk, and contains a fish on whose body appears a vesicle, full of a pale yellow, viscid, purulent substance, which constitutes the dye. The mode of extracting it is, to break the shell carefully with a hammer, so as not to crush the fish, and then to let

* Neither of these is mentioned by Henderson.

out the liquor in the vesicle with a lancet or other sharp instrument. I used, for greater convenience, a pen, and wrote my initials, &c. on a handkerchief: the marks, in half an hour after, were of a dirty green colour, and, on being exposed to the air a few hours longer, changed to a rich crimson. The quantity produced by each is very small, but quite sufficient for such an experiment. The best time for making it is when the animal is in a state of incipient putrescency. I have no doubt that, if a sufficient quantity of them were taken, and the dyeing matter, when extracted, were liquefied in a small degree with gum-water, a valuable article of commerce might be produced. The liquid is a perfect substantive dye, and of course resists the action of alkalies.

" Ten leagues north of this place is the fine capacious harbour of Guaroupas, with its handsome town. The anchorage is equally good as in that of Dos Ganchos (or Tejucas). This bay, as far as I could observe during my short visit to it, presents to the view a greater diversity of hills, valleys, and plain, than the one above-mentioned. Both are esteemed fine fishing-ground during the whale season, which is from December to June.

" From hence northward is the fine harbour of San Francisco in the bay of the same name. It has three entrances, defended by forts: that to the south is most frequented. The land here is very flat for several miles, and the rivers which intersect it, are navigable for canoes as far as the base of the great chain of mountains, where a public road, begun with incredible labour and expense, leads over that almost impassable barrier. This road will soon be a work of national importance to Brazil, as through it, the finest district in that country, and indeed, one of the finest in the world in point of climate, the rich plain of Coritiva (Curitiba) will be connected with the ocean. The chain of mountains which bounds that plain,

is washed at the base by a lagoon, communicating in a direct line with the harbour of San Francisco, where many merchant-ships have been constructed of the finest timber. The chief occupations of the inhabitants are the cutting of timber and other labours connected with ship-building. Vessels of large dimensions, and a number of small craft for coasters, have been built here by merchants of Rio de Janeiro, Bahia, and Pernambuco. When this trade is brisk, there is a great demand for the various classes of artisans whom it requires, and many negroes are employed. The wood used is so strong, and holds the iron so firmly, that ships built of it endure many years, and are in greater esteem with the Portuguese and Spaniards than those built in Europe. On this account, the harbour of San Francisco is likely to become of considerable value to Brazil; and as it is connected with Coritiva, the cattle of which have been found superior to those of Rio Grande, there is every probability that, at no distant period, the Portuguese navy will be here supplied with salt provisions. This must, however, depend on the completion of the great road over the mountains. Towards the north there are woods of fine large pines, exceedingly hard, tough, and full of resin. They constitute a singular variety of the genus *pinus*. The boughs branch off from the upper part of the tree only, and have tussocks of leaves at each extremity. A tree eighty feet high, for instance, will appear without branches to the height of about fifty-five feet: the branches there extend horizontally in every direction, with leaves at their extremities, the lowest and largest to a distance of fourteen or fifteen feet from the stem, and the higher ones gradually diminishing in length towards the top, which ends in a tuft of leaves as a crown for the whole. These trees are very picturesque, indeed beautiful: they grow to a sufficient size to

serve as masts for ships of two or three hundred tons. I was told there were much larger ones to be found." *

It is not quite easy to reconcile with this description of the coast, the account which we find given by Mr. Henderson, on the authority of Padre Cazal. To the north of the bay of Guaroupas, three leagues beyond the small river Cambory-guassu, is the embouchure of "the great river Tajahy," which is stated to be the only river met with on the road from Portalagre to St. Paulo, that flows towards the east. At the passage, a short distance from the beach, it is "little less than sixty fathoms in width." "The *sumacas* proceed up it only three miles: launches and large canoes navigate freely as far as the first fall. About 120 yards above, it becomes navigable for three days by towing, and as many more with the oar, to the next cataract. It rises between the Rio Negro and the Correntes, which run to the westward. Five miles further to the north is the river Gravata, otherwise Iriri-guassu, thirty fathoms wide, and navigable for canoes. It is followed by the *spacious bay of Itapacoroya*, where there is an establishment for whale-fishing. Three leagues to the north, the river Itapicu disembogues, being fifty fathoms wide and of considerable depth. Its origin is far back in the province, and affords navigation to small canoes for many leagues without the interruption of more than one cataract, which is situated ten miles above the mouth. The agitated state of the sea at the mouth of this river, does not permit the entrance of any description of vessel. Immediately beyond the bar, it forms a lake called Lagoa da Cruz, two leagues long from north to south, parallel with the beach, and very narrow. Among the rivers which enlarge it are remarked, the Piranga, which is re-

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 68—82.

ceived by the left bank, and is navigable by canoes for five leagues; the Upitanga, which joins it by the right margin, and is navigable for only six miles; the Itapicumirim, that comes from the N.W., and admits of navigation for about fifteen miles; the Jaragua, which flows from the S.W., and appears capable of allowing small vessels to proceed as far as a situation about four leagues above its mouth; and the Braço, which descends from the N.W., and admits of canoes for the space of six miles. All these rivers run by winding courses among mountains and uncultivated territories thickly wooded, demonstrating the natural fertility of the soil. The Itapicu is supposed to be the river of Dragons, which the discoverers placed to the south of the river St. Francisco in this district. Five miles to the north of Itapicu is the island of St. Francisco, six leagues long, and in the form of a bow, the right line of which is nearest the coast. The channel which separates it from the continent, is improperly called the river of St. Francisco. The southern entrance, denominated Aracary, is 200 fathoms wide, and has only depth for large boats; on its outside are the three islands of Remedios and two of Tamborotes. The northern bar, called Babitonga, is 1500 fathoms wide, and deep enough for large *sumacas*.* At the end of the sixteenth century, it was not known that the land between the bars of Aracary and Babitonga is an island; they were thought to be two mighty rivers, the southern called the St. Francisco, and the northern the Alagado. The channel, (the supposed river of St. Francisco,) of a semicircular form, enlarges considerably from both mouths to the middle, where it is three miles wide, and contains a cluster of more than twenty islands. A great number of rivers empty themselves here. The island of St. Francisco is low, watered

* *Sumacas* are from ten to nearly two hundred tons burden.

with various small rivers, and inhabited. On its eastern side there is a narrow lake, ten miles long from north to south, denominated the river Acarahy, and near it another small one. Two leagues north of the bar of Babitonga is the river Sahy Mirim, and the same distance further, the Sahy Grande, both inconsiderable, uniting in one stream a little above their embouchures." * This is the river which has already been mentioned as the northern boundary of the province, dividing it from St. Paulo.

These minute and not very interesting topographical details are inserted here, because the part of the coast to which they relate, has hitherto received little attention from modern travellers, and may be considered as almost unknown country. If the bar of Babitonga be, as we imagine, Mr. Mawe's harbour of St. Francisco, he has taken no notice of the bay of Itapacoroya. The lagoon he speaks of as washing the base of the cordillera, is, probably, the Lagoa da Cruz. The "great river Tajahy" would seem to deserve being explored. The port of St. Francisco appears to want depth of water for large vessels, a circumstance materially affecting its value. Along this whole tract of coast, north of St. Miguel, there does not appear to be a single town or parish. The land bordering on the bay of Tejucas, according to Mr. Mawe, was thought of so little value, that any one might take as much as he pleased of what was unappropriated, provided he made a proper application for it to the Government. The plain is stated by Mr. Henderson to be marshy in winter.

The town of St. Francisco, situated on the island to which it gives name, about ten miles within the bar of Babitonga, consists of houses mostly built of earth, and a stone church dedicated to Nossa Senhora da Graça. Only

* Henderson's Brazil, pp. 155, 6.

two streets are paved. The inhabitants are almost all whites, and are remarked to be of very pale complexion: they are chiefly occupied in the cultivation of mandioc, and as the town is said to be well supplied with fish, their *maigre* diet may possibly account for their cadaverous appearance. The country adjacent, however, though rich, is said to be swampy, and of course unhealthy.*

The only place in the province, on the continent, that is dignified with the name of a town, is Laguna, prettily situated upon the eastern margin of the lake from which it derives its name, two miles from the bar, and sixty miles south of Desterro.† It has three parallel streets, crossed by others, and a square at one side, in which the court-house is situated. A great part of the houses are of stone. It has only one church, dedicated to St. Antonio dos Anjos, and, for a Brazilian town, appears to be singularly destitute of religious establishments. "From its port," says Mr. Henderson, "which receives coasting-vessels, are exported farinha, rice, Indian corn, timber, and salt fish." In the months of November and December particularly, a prodigious quantity of a long fish with a forked tail, called *bagre*, enter the lake, supplying a lucrative branch of commerce. At a small distance inland is the *Morro* of Santa Maria (in some charts written Santa Martha), "the last abutment of the mountains,

* It is singular that Mr. Luccock, from whom we transcribe this last remark, should speak of the St. Francisco as the only considerable river in the province, adopting the erroneous notion respecting the channel, and taking no notice of the Tajahy.

† Here we follow Cazal. Mr. Luccock terms the *lake* a *bay*. *Lagoa* certainly means lake, but the discrepancy is explained by supposing that, like *Lagoa Feia* and some others which have been described, it is a bay in the rainy season, a lake when the bar is dry. The distance to St. Catherine's, he says, is ninety miles, but he means *by land*. The route leads along "a mountainous and woody road, through a country abounding in wild beasts, and occupied by Indians hardly less savage."—*Notes*, &c. p. 238.

at their southern limit, which extends to the sea. A little beyond it is the great eastern Serro skirting the ocean." Fifteen miles north of Laguna, and nearly fifty south of the capital, is Villa Nova or St. Anna, situated on an elevation near the northern extremity of the same lake: it is a small place, the houses generally of wood. More flax is cultivated and manufactured here than in any other part of the province. Thirty-five miles to the north of this parish, and ten south of the capital, is that of Nossa Senhora do Rozario, a mere village, situated on the bay of Brito. In this district there are hot springs, the same, probably, that Mr. Luccock refers to, as reported to resemble the waters of Harrowgate, with the addition of considerable warmth. They are found, he says, on the banks of the Cubatam. "Swamps render the road to the spot very bad; and the absolute want of every convenience for invalids, prevents their receiving any advantage from this salutary provision of nature." The time may not, however, be very distant, when this unknown, unvisited spot shall attract around it a *villa nova*, to which not only the Vincentistas and Paulistas, but the more polished Caryocas of Rio may repair as to the Spa of Brazil.

THE next province, the most southern in the empire, is that of

RIO GRANDE DO SUL,

Bounded on the north by Sta. Catharina and St. Paulo; on the west, by the river Uruguay, which separates it from the province of that name; on the south, by the river Plata; and on the east, by the Atlantic: it is upwards of 500 miles long and 400 wide, lying between lat. 28° and 35° S., and enjoys a temperate and salubrious climate. This extensive province has only since 1800 enjoyed a local government, being up to that time considered as a

dependency on that of Rio; and it is still, we believe, included, ecclesiastically, within its episcopal see. The southern part has always, till very lately, been the theatre of perpetual contention between the Portuguese and the Spaniards of Buenos Ayres, owing to the constant infraction of the various treaties of demarcation by which it had been attempted to settle their respective boundaries. When Mr. Luccock was in Brazil (A. D. 1809—1813), the country south of the river Piratinim, watered by the Ygaroon, was still held by the Spaniards, though claimed by the Portuguese. "Whenever the question of yielding it up was started afresh, there was never any want of difficulties to impede the determination. Both parties had the wisdom, in the mean time, to carry on a considerable commercial intercourse with the Rio Grande; and though occasionally a Portuguese vessel was seized, it was as lightly restored as detained." *

This province was not included in the original distribution of the coast among the first donatories; nor was its colonisation accomplished by Viscount D'Asseca or his brother John Correa de Sa, to whom Peter II. granted extensive lands in the territory denominated St. Gabriel, adjacent to the Plata. Towards the end of the sixteenth, or the beginning of the seventeenth century, some Vincentistas (inhabitants of St. Vincente) first removed to the vicinity of the Lagoa dos Patos; and their descendants extended themselves to the south and west, as the Indians gradually retired. The capitanias of the De Sousa's † could not be enlarged beyond their prescribed limits, notwithstanding the districts south of St. Amaro were *devoluta*, or without donatories; yet, the first settlers were always considered as their people, and known as Vincentistas and Paulistas, till these districts were erected into a province. ‡

* Luccock's Notes, p. 215. † See p. 16.

‡ Henderson, p. 110.

During the sixty years that Portugal was subject to the court of Castile, various Spanish colonies established themselves in the vicinity of the river Uruguay. To check their extension eastward, the Colonia do Sacramento was founded by the government of Rio in 1680. Scarcely had seven months elapsed, when the new settlement was surprised and taken by the Spanish governor of Buenos Ayres, the capture being attended by circumstances of much barbarity. It was restored to the Portuguese at the end of three years, but, in 1703, again returned under the dominion of the Spaniards, being abandoned by the governor after a long and valorous resistance. By the treaty of Utrecht in 1713, it was restored to the crown of Portugal. In 1735, it was again attacked by the governor of Buenos Ayres; but this time, the Portuguese garrison defended themselves with so much resolution and effect, that though reduced to the necessity of eating dogs, cats, and rats, they maintained the position till the arrival of succours, which compelled the assailants to raise the siege. The nefarious convention of 1750 * once more gave up the colony of Santo Sacramento to the Spaniards. In 1761, the treaty of limits was annulled, and Colonia reverted to Portugal; it was retaken by the governor of Buenos Ayres the year following; was restored on the conclusion of a treaty of peace the next year; † was again ceded to the Spaniards in 1777, in exchange for the island of Sta. Catharina, which they had treacherously seized, and remained in their possession till it was taken by the British forces under Sir Samuel Auchmuty in 1804. The event of the ill-fated expedition against Buenos Ayres,

* See p. 47.

† Though Colonia was then given up, Rio Grande (St. Pedro) and some other garrisons remained under the dominion of Spain till 1777, when they were restored in exchange for the reductions of Paraguay. See p. 55, *note*.

restored it to the Spaniards; but at length, they have been compelled to resign their possessions on that side of the Plata, and the whole province has been finally incorporated with the empire of Brazil.

Up to the year 1763, the provincial capital was St. Pedro do Sul, commonly called Rio Grande from its harbour, which forms the entrance to the Lagoa dos Patos, and is improperly termed a river. The town was begun a league to the south-west, in the situation called Estreito, near the head of the bay: it stood on a bank about twenty feet high, and was surrounded with a parapet of sods as a barrier against the encroaching sand. Yet, by a slow, but sure progress, it appears to have gained ground so as almost to have overwhelmed the town, and to have occasioned the removal of the inhabitants between the years 1747 and 1750. "Notwithstanding the buried state of the few ruins that remain, its form and extent," says Mr. Luccock, "may be made out. It was small, and the buildings were slightly constructed; and its want of importance may be concluded from the probability that it had no church, as not the smallest traces of such an edifice are to be discovered."* This supposition, however, is inadmissible: the church may have been pulled down, if it is not overwhelmed by sand; but a town without a church never, we may be assured, existed in Brazil. When St. Pedro was taken by the Spaniards in 1762, the village of Nossa Senhora de Conceiçao became the capital, under the name, given to it by the governor, of Portalegre. In 1808, it received the title of a town, and is now the chief place in the province, where reside all the principal authorities, civil, ecclesiastical, and military. St. Pedro, however, though dependent on Portalegre, derives from its situation on the coast, a permanent importance. Here,

* Luccock's Notes, p. 129.

all vessels are required to deliver their papers, large ships seldom proceeding higher; and here, the principal merchants or their agents reside; so that, at the time of Mr. Luccock's residence, it was the great mart of southern Brazil.

On approaching the coast from the south, land is first made in the neighbourhood of Estreito, about nine leagues to the N. E. of the bar of the Rio Grande. Mr. Luccock thus describes the aspect of the coast. "Little round hillocks of sand, without the slightest degree of vegetation, seemed to rise out of the water, to which a splendid sun communicated a dazzling whiteness. Soon it appeared, that these were only inequalities of a sandy shore, from the midst of which arose the church of Estreito, * a small building, in the usual style of such edifices in the villages of Brazil. A few trees and a scanty portion of verdure about it, now becoming visible, served to increase the forbidding appearance of the surrounding desert. Long before we saw any marks by which to guide our course, we were in shoal water and encompassed with sand-banks. We entered the river between a bluff head to our left, and a long, low, sandy point to the east, through a passage about half a mile wide, guarded by a few miserable erections called forts and batteries. Just within the passage lie the vessels which have received their lading, and are ready to proceed on their voyages, waiting for a sufficient depth of water on the bar. The decline of day and the tediousness of our progress rendered me impatient, and induced me to ascend the mast, hoping to look beyond the flat, dreary, desolate, and almost houseless waste immediately before our eyes. From thence, nothing was to be discovered towards the east, but loose and barren sand;

* Cazal says, the site of the old town of St. Pedro was called Estreito; but there appear to be two places so denominated.

westward, appeared a tract of swamps partially covered with brushwood; beyond, a broad line of water, the Bay of Mangueira; and still further, the small, white, pretty-looking town of St. Pedro do Sul. The church, which the people dignify with the name of cathedral, rose in the centre of the buildings, and formed the chief feature of the view. The next morning, the vessel was brought up in a masterly style to her anchorage, close to the village of St. Pedro do Norte, and three miles from the principal town, the sand-banks not permitting a nearer approach. From the entrance of the river to the anchorage, through a course of nine miles, the same obstructions prevail, leaving a narrow, intricate channel, with barely water sufficient for a deep-laden brig. About six miles up, on the left hand, is a large bay still called the Bay of Mangueira,* though little of that plant remains on the neighbouring swamps. In the bay, fishes of various sorts so abound, that afterwards, crossing it at a late hour, great numbers threw themselves over our canoe in every direction, and some fell into it. A little higher up is another broad inlet, navigable for yachts of 50 tons, within which is the fertile island of Marinheiros, containing some of the highest land and the best cultivated spots in the neighbourhood. The soil is a red clay, which shews that it was once attached to the continent, and is of older formation than the bay. It is celebrated for the production of onions;

* This appears to be an error for *mangue*, "a small tree with a smooth rind and thick and varnished leaves," which prospers only upon the sea-coast, or the margins of salt rivers; whereas the *mangueira*, or *mangua-tree*, is described by Mr. Henderson, as "a bulky tree with a leafy tuft," having a long, pointed leaf, the fruit the size of an apple, but resembling more a green-gage, green or yellow, sometimes tinged with red; when divested of the skin, which has a turpentine taste, the pulp is juicy and delicious, although unpleasantly full of fibres attached to the stone. It is a native of Asia, and prospers only in the torrid zone.

and from hence, or from the island of Sta. Maria, the town is supplied with almost the only drinkable water used within it. Beyond these islands, the water expands to a breadth of more than ten miles, but is so very shallow, that the practicable channel, which runs near the eastern shore, is, in one part, not more than a hundred yards wide. Other islands, besides those which have been mentioned, are scattered about this expanse of water, and communicate to it some little ornament. The distance from the bar to the entrance of the Lagoa dos Patos, is about thirty miles; the whole of which is, with some impropriety, called the Rio Grande, and considered as the harbour of St. Pedro. Through this long course, the channel is hardly any where more than twelve feet deep, the water often declining on the sides of it to three feet, and, in some places, to six inches; so that three feet may, perhaps, be nearly the average depth of the river.

"The country, as we advanced towards St. Pedro, and even in the environs of that town, was not much better than the portion of it already described. When settled, my favourite morning walk was to a fort upon the summit of the loftiest hillock near the place, from which, small as the elevation really is, there is a spacious view of the river, and of a region wild and desolate in almost every quarter. To the north lies the fine island of Marinheiros; to the south, a marshy tract, partially covered with vegetation, the ground rising and becoming drier as it approaches the ocean; to the east, beyond the water, are loose sand-hills, their height from a hundred and twenty to a hundred and forty feet; their tops are usually round; towards the west, the country is also sandy, gently undulated, and destitute of every thing green. When the wind blows strongly from the south-east, as it often does, it brings with it so much sand, which whirls from the tops of the hills like smoke from a volcano, that the eyes must

hardly venture to take that direction. Turning the back to the wind for relief, the sand is seen travelling onward like a vast fall of snow, a portion of which, impeded by the town, is piled against the houses, and sometimes mounts and crushes the roofs. The extent of this desert, however, is not great: it forms a slip along the edge of the ocean, not more than fifteen miles broad at a medium, though it is three hundred miles long; and here and there are scattered rich oases, the sites of pleasant farms. The sand evidently comes from the ocean, being cast upon the coast and then driven further inland.

"The town, situated in a level plain, not many inches above high-water-mark, contains about five hundred dwellings; and the whole number of stationary inhabitants may, perhaps, be two thousand, two-thirds of which are supposed to be white, or very slightly tinged. But some of the houses belonging to persons who reside on their estates, are seldom occupied, except at religious festivals. The principal row of houses runs east and west, enjoying from their latticed windows the prospect of an extensive, flat, and bare island, across a water which is about six hundred yards over. Behind this row, which is really neat and pretty, is a street of small, low huts, constructed of mud, and covered with thatch, the habitations of the lower ranks. Here, those accumulations of sand which have already been mentioned, frequently take place; and during my continuance in St. Pedro, several of the houses were nearly overwhelmed by them, and greatly injured. Were it not for this barrier, the better ones would be exposed to the same fate.

"The public buildings in St. Pedro, would of themselves be hardly worthy of notice; but, a few particulars relative to them may serve to illustrate the state of the place. At their head stands the Cathedral, the plainness

of which, both within and without, does not prevent it from being a handsome edifice. At each end of the front rises a square tower, finished with a small turret. The entrance is by folding-doors; and over it is the orchestra, lighted by a large round window, giving some little ornament to the front: the chancel and altar face the doors. On each side, a portion of the area is railed off for male worshippers, and in the centre is the station of females. From the ground to the ridge of this church is about fifty feet, and before it the sand has accumulated to the same height; but the wind striking against the building, has caused it to recoil from the walls, and formed a sort of deep and gloomy dell, leading to the door. It has been fifty years accumulating, as old people tell us, and its elevation indicates that it must have risen about a foot every year. Its encroachment on the street occasioned men to be employed in clearing it away; and it was matter of no small surprise to me, that, as they worked at the bottom, the heap did not slide downward, but the face of it remained perpendicular. On closer inspection, I found that the whole mass was composed of *laminæ*, which had acquired so much adhesion, that pieces might be taken out nearly as large as our half-crowns. By ascertaining how many of them were contained in an inch, I concluded that the mass must be at least equal to the number of days in fifty years, and that the accumulated sand of each day was consolidated by the calmness and dews of the succeeding night; a variety of tints being observable in them as in sand-stone in general, probably according to the measure of moisture employed in their formation. The appearance corresponded exactly to the micaceous, laminated sand-stone of England; so that it seems that sand, gathered by wind alone, would produce this kind of stone, and in fifty years might acquire consistency

enough to enable the mass to support a face of ninety degrees.*

"A short new street at the eastern side of the town, conducts to the only defence of the place, by courtesy called the Fort, far better calculated to suppress an insurrection, than to keep out an enemy. It is an artificial mount of sand, its sides covered with sods, and on the top is a platform surrounded with a breastwork of earth, with embrasures for six guns. Here is also a signal-post, which announces the appearance of vessels off the Bar, and the number which may have entered the port during the night. The guns of the Fort are brass, long eighteen-pounders, of excellent workmanship, and ornamented with the arms of Spain. They are mounted on carriages, which would be demolished by a first discharge, and are placed in a circle, so far distant from the channel, as little to annoy an approaching enemy. The magazine is a poor mud hut at the foot of the hill, with a few balls lying about it; but if there were powder, it would be impossible to keep it in order in such a situation.

"Pitiful as is the chief custom-house of Brazil, that of St. Pedro falls as much below it as the town is inferior to

* "Dried branches of shrubs are frequently found upon the sandy wastes, which once enjoyed moisture enough to enable them to vegetate. These disappearing, would continue to retain their form, if the congregated sand ever hardened into stone. This may account for the appearance of such substances embedded in rocks. On like principles, the marks of footsteps in the sand-stone of England may be accounted for. My horse's feet, in passing, frequently broke the strata to the depth of six inches; and should the surrounding part ever be consolidated, the impression of his foot would remain, to whatever depth it might afterwards be buried. After rain, I observed the same kind of depressions on the surface of these deserts, as are found in much of the Yorkshire sand-stone; these are overwhelmed as the sand dries, and begins again to move, but they are not obliterated, and remain to excite the curiosity of ages to come."

the capital. It is a stone building, with walls about ten feet high, and covered with a deep roof, giving it the appearance of an old English barn. Within, two square portions are railed off, each of which is furnished with a table and forms, for the transaction of business. The insignificant remainder of space enclosed within its walls, is the only place where goods can be deposited under the government key. In front of it, close to the water, is a small tiled shed, raised upon posts over a planked floor, and furnished with a crane, which is the only public wharf, and the place where all merchandise must be landed. At no great distance is the gaol, a miserable dungeon, enlightened only through an open railing in front, which at the same time exposes the prisoners, and displays such wretchedness, as may possibly have more effect on some minds than a sense of moral rectitude. The governor's house is at the west end of what has been described as the principal row of buildings; it is of one story only, like the generality of its neighbours, but distinguished from almost every other habitation in the place by an ascent to it of a few steps, and by its glazed windows. In the same row is what few of my countrymen would hesitate to call the comfortless abode of the vicar, the chief clergyman of the parish. It consists of two stories; the lower one open or appropriated to offices; the upper, entered from without by a stepladder, contains the family apartments. The walls are whitened; the windows much like those of our hay-lofts, with shutters painted red.

"The Ferry-house, the only place where a boat is allowed to be hired, is commodiously situated near the public quay. For his exclusive privilege, the proprietor pays a rent to the crown, and is obliged to furnish and keep in order a *catraia* or launch, which, when the weather permits, must cross the water every two hours. The fare is about six-pence; and should a man wish to cross at any

but the usual times, he may command a boat for a double fee, though he should be the only passenger." *

There are "two orders of devout women" at St. Pedro; that is to say, two female religious establishments, or *recolhimentos*, one of St. Francisco, the other of Carmo. Mr. Henderson speaks of several English establishments here, connected with mercantile houses at Rio. The heat is stated to be intense. "Cats fly from the rats, which are large and exceedingly numerous; but they have a formidable enemy in the dog. The houses are generally very wretched; † the streets of a fine sand, the same as the neighbourhood. It enters so profusely into the houses, at the season of the high winds, that it is impossible to eat any thing without a portion of sand being intermixed with it."

The town is properly a garrison; and the governor had under his orders at the period referred to, two regiments of the line; one belonging to Rio Grande, about four hundred strong; the other consisting of about three hundred men, and belonging to St. Paul's; also a body of cavalry raised from the farms, and a regiment of militia. "The

* "When the farmer of this ferry heard that the royal family had arrived in Brazil, he owed to the crown 800,000 reis (215*l.*); he therefore mounted a horse, and, with the greatest secresy, set off without passports for the capital, where he arrived at the end of three weeks, having travelled nearly eight hundred miles by an unusual route, for the sake of avoiding pursuit and detention. He threw himself at the prince-regent's feet, confessed the debt, and his utter inability to discharge it. His royal highness was so much pleased with this mark of confidence, as generously to remit the sum, and re-instate the man in his post."

† The one hired by Mr. Luccock, which was equal to most in the place, consisted of a ground-floor only; it had a *sala* or sitting-room towards the street, enlightened by one window without glass or lattice, and which, when the shutters were open, completely exposed the room and all that passed within it. Behind was an alcove for sleeping, and an unfloored kitchen in a pent-house. For this mansion, Mr. L. paid a rent of 12 patacas (about 20*s.*) per month.

yeomen and militia were deficient in every thing but numbers. They appeared in the field with *lassos*, or nooses, and could certainly catch their enemies with more skill than they could exhibit in the use of a musket." Between the two regiments a feud of long standing prevailed, partaking of the national antipathies between the Spaniards and Portuguese, and dating from the occupation of the province by the former. On one occasion, a severe affray took place; lives were lost on both sides, and it became necessary to send off the Paulistas to encamp on the frontiers.

At this period (1809), the commercial importance of St. Pedro was gradually on the increase, owing to the great extension of the inland trade. Monte Video, its rival, then in the possession of the Spaniards, was in distress, Spain being no longer in a condition to supply the wants, or take the produce of the country. Upon this part of Brazil, therefore, many towns along the coast mainly depended for a supply of food; while an influx of inhabitants, arising from the advance of trade, and from the preference which Portuguese emigrants gave to this part of the country, as better suited to their constitutions than the warmer provinces of the north, increased the consumption and the cost of provisions. The vessels sailing from Rio Grande in 1808, amounted to one hundred and fifty, half of them bound for Rio. In 1814, there sailed from this port no fewer than 333 vessels of various kinds, laden with wheat, hides, tallow, *carne secco* or *charqueados* (dried beef), cheese, and other articles. They were chiefly brigs of from 100 to 200 tons burden. As yet, however, the want of a circulating medium, and the rude state of society, rendered this part a very contracted market for European commodities. "If, instead of business, amusing occupation and pleasant society had been our object," says Mr. Luccock, "we should have had little reason to complain of St. Pedro.

Its neighbourhood afforded ample scope for riding, walking, and field sports. The people in general seemed disposed to gayety, were harmonious among themselves, and friendly to strangers. At the house of the vicar, we always found within, that which made us forget its comfortless exterior. He was a man of some zeal, and more goodness of heart; regarded as the father, though not revered as the saint of his district. Under his roof, there was a constant evening lounge for the heretics as well as the Catholics, in which lively conversation was occasionally varied by cards and dancing. Some of the inferior clergy whom we met with, appeared to be respectable men; but, if their services were really enforced by their example, they were insufficient to prevent a great laxity of morals. Marriages were rare at St. Pedro, compared with the population, though the town and province enjoyed, in this respect, some privileges not common (at this period) to the colony. In other parts, if not here also, when Brazil was decidedly considered as a Portuguese dependency, it was necessary to obtain *from Lisbon*, a license for the solemnization of marriage. If the swain made any pretences to wealth or distinction, it was not unusual for him to go thither to seek it, with voluminous testimonials of his birth, residence, and means. In the gay circles of the capital, he not unfrequently found another charmer, or perhaps, on his return, had to lament a new instance of human instability, his fair one having forsaken him. So did state policy unite with other causes to impair social virtue and domestic comfort. Indeed, here, as in Rio de Janeiro, moral principles seemed to have little influence: there was the same want of fidelity, honour, and confidence. Religion frightened some into uprightness, and a strict police restrained and compelled greater numbers. The country, too, was pastoral, and uninfected with the mania of mining. Yet, if it possessed a few moral advantages, the great in-

flux of strangers, and the frequent changes in society, were peculiarly hostile to its feeble virtue." *

Among the female part of society, however, there appeared some affectionate sisters and wives; and a much higher degree of domestic and social happiness was witnessed here, than in most parts of the country. The elder women are described as frank and chatty; the younger ones as unusually pleasing. None of them went much abroad, though less restrained than in Rio, more regarded as companions and friends, and more freely admitted into society.

The costume of the inhabitants of Rio Grande does not appear to differ materially from that of the Paulistas; but, as connected with the state of manners, the description may not be uninteresting.

"Gentlemen wore cotton shirts, neatly made, with open work and lace at the breast, and the collar sprucely tied with a black ribbon. Their coats resembled our surtouts, in some cases adorned with loops and tassels, in others with large silver buttons; the waistcoats were made of calico, generally printed in a large running pattern; the trowsers of white cotton cloth. In the house, when perfectly at ease, the coat was often exchanged for a calico jacket, and the feet thrust into slippers. Elderly men, when dressed, wore large buckles; the younger, departing from the state of their fathers, used shoe-strings. On few occasions, and by few people, even of the highest rank, were stockings of any kind worn; and no one went out on occasions of ceremony, without a cocked hat and a dirk. If about to travel, they put on pantaloons of white cotton cloth, and drew over them long boots, fastened below the knee with a strap and buckle. In the country, and passing from one place to another, they wore broad-brimmed

* Notes, &c. pp. 186, 190.

hats, made of plaited straw, or the leaf of the palm, and a woollen or cotton *poncho*,—a garment made of one large piece, with a hole in the middle, through which the head is thrust, and falling loosely before, behind, and over the arms. The *poncho*, if made of cloth, is frequently trimmed all round with velveteen, and lined with baize of some gay colour; if of cotton, it is ornamented with a border of various colours, woven with the piece, and is of South American manufacture. Ordinary working people, such as sailors, boatmen, guides, and the lower order of farmers and peasantry, wear woollen jackets, with quarter-dollars for buttons, in such number and order as means may allow, or fancy dictate. I never saw here the poorest white peasant, who, besides these ornaments of the jacket, did not carry about him a silver fork and spoon. This practice makes them more cleanly in their habits of eating, than their northern brethren; and one good habit usually introduces others.

"Ladies appear in public in the *mantilha*, a square piece of silk, bordered with broad lace, which is fastened on the head, and falls over the back and shoulders. They wear stockings and showy-coloured shoes. Their headdress is Portuguese, adorned with flowers, and sometimes, in the evening, with fire-flies. Females of the second class wear, out of their houses, a sort of great coat, called a *capota*, made of cassimere, and gaudily trimmed with plush. Female slaves have only the *baéta*, a square cloth or baize, often decorated with a hair-list; their hair bound with a piece of red binding, or a Bandana handkerchief; their feet invariably bare."

The class of persons who occasionally repair to St. Pedro, as the purchasers of goods, from the interior, are characterised as manifesting, by a thin beard, lank hair, and an unsettled eye, some mixture of Indian blood. The men of genuine Spanish or Portuguese origin have

thick and strong beards, the hair wavy, the visage and limbs longer than those of mixed blood. The complexion of all is a deep brown, with the hair and irides black. "These strangers were clothed chiefly in coarse and strong cotton of domestic manufacture, fashioned into a shirt with open sleeves, and trowsers which reached a little below the knee, and were fastened round the loins with a girdle. This girdle, like the rest a fabric of their own country, was also made of cotton dyed blue or red, sometimes of both colours, alternated with white, and fringed at the ends; it was long and narrow, wrapped three or four times round the body, and within its folds were deposited their money, and whatever else they accounted most valuable. Over their shoulders was slung a small pouch of skin, containing a flint, a steel, and a spongeous substance, answering the purpose of tinder, and sometimes a small quantity of tobacco. It hence appeared, that their customs were derived from the Spaniards, and their abode was beyond the Portuguese frontiers. They all wore a high, conical-crowned hat of felt, straw, or palm-leaf; a sharp knife stuck in the girdle; and, though without shoe or stocking, a spur fixed to the heel by a strip of raw hide. A few among them, who, it may be, dwelt near some place of consequence, appeared in jackets or long blue coats, waistcoats of slink-skin, and boots buckled round the knees. A still smaller number wore neck-handkerchiefs and hangers, and had their attendants following them. Though the number of these people, particularly of the inferior class, was considerable, they seemed always unable to put off their jealousy of the Brazilians, and withdrew, at sunset, to their quarters in the plain, four or five miles from the town.

"The equipments of the horses belonging to these men, were little different from those in common use on this part of the American continent. Their bridle-bits are

crooked iron curbs, with cheek-plates; the mouth-piece also is crooked, and through the upper part of the curve an iron ring is passed, about five inches in diameter, into which, when the bridle is put on, the horse's chin, or lower jaw, is thrust; so that the whole forms a most powerful curb. There is only a single rein to the bridle, the two ends of which proceed from the points of the curb, and meet upon the horse's withers, in a ring about an inch in diameter, from which proceeds a lash four feet long: the whip being thus attached to the bridle, the horseman's right hand is left at liberty. The leather is formed from a hide neatly cut into long shreds, which are soaked in oil or melted tallow, until they are completely pliable; they are then plaited with equal neatness, and form a round thong as thick as the little finger. The headstall is formed of the same materials; and the bridle, altogether, is not only recommended by its appearance, but by its power to restrain the most headstrong animal. There is still more singularity in the stirrups, which are, in common, made from the transverse section of an ox's horn, brought nearly to a triangular shape; or of brass, bearing some resemblance to the vertical section of a bell. In both cases, they are so small as to admit only the tip of a boot, if the rider have any, or a few of the naked toes. They are attached to the saddle by straps, which cannot be lengthened or shortened. Though a saddle has been mentioned as part of the horse-furniture of the strangers, it would have been more correct to speak of the *lumbillio*, which is universally used among them, and indeed all ranks of horsemen in Rio Grande. The *lumbillio*, borrowed from the Spanish colonists, and by them from their mother-country, is a sort of thin pannel about two feet long, of exactly the same form in its front and back, and covered with embossed leather. It is fastened

to the horse by a bandage made of ten or a dozen thongs, all the ends of which terminate in two iron rings. When this is thrown over it, and passed round the horse's body, the two rings are drawn together by a thong, so forcibly that the *lumbillio* cannot possibly move. A dried sheep-skin is usually the upper covering; and if the rider be a person of consequence, a skin is selected with long and orderly disposed wool, and dyed with indigo. In this case, too, the covering is kept in its place by a surcingle of white cotton, six inches broad, with figures of animals and birds interwoven in colours, most commonly in various shades of blue and red." *

The slaves of this district, "as they are less numerous than in most of the provinces, so," says Mr. Luccock, "they appeared better and happier. The price paid for them was high, and there was great difficulty in procuring them: this may account, in part, for their lenient treatment. But I apprehend that a more efficient cause is, the moderate temperature of the climate, which enables their white masters to take a share in their labours." Yet here, as almost every where, "it seems sufficient," he adds, "that a man has the hue of a negro, to mark him out as an object on which tyranny may exercise itself."

The village of St. Pedro do Norte on the other side of the harbour, which Mr. Luccock represents as the port, consists of about a hundred miserable huts, placed amid loose and lofty hills of sand. Even in what are called the streets, the passengers are up to the ancles.† To the

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 198—201.

† It is not a little singular, that Cazal takes no notice of St. Pedro do Norte, mentioning only one place as designated by the name of that saint; but, "on the eastern bank of the river, in front of St. Pedro," he places "the considerable and flourishing *arraial* of *St.*

east of the village appears a uniform, dreary desert of sand, blown up into hills, some of them two hundred feet high, connected by a lower and curved ridge, exhibiting in miniature the contour of our micaceous sandstone mountains. Pursuing the road northward, which passes along the peninsula lying between the Lagoa dos Patos and the ocean, the land narrows, at the distance of about twelve miles, to a single league, and hence is called the *Estreito*. "Near at hand," says Mr. Luccock, "is a village, the first, it is said, which the Portuguese built in this part of the country: it was the capital till 1750, and seems to have been established a century earlier, at which time it probably enjoyed the advantage of a port." This statement is at variance, however, with the account given by Mr. Henderson (from Cazal), that the site of the town which was begun in the situation called Estreito, and from which the removal was made to St. Pedro, is a league to the south-west of the present city; as well as with Mr. Luccock's own description of the old town, the ruins of which he found about three miles from St. Pedro. It is to be regretted that he omits to mention the name of the village, which may have been the first settlement, although at no period dignified with the name of town or capital. Two different places are apparently confounded under the name of Estreito.

"As the neck of land afterwards widens, it becomes more solid, flat, and verdant, rich in herbage, and supporting large herds of cattle. Lakes are scattered in every direction; and, in the wet season, the whole plain is covered with water, so that the cattle perish for want of sustenance, of which the numerous skeletons lying

Joze, with a hermitage of the same name." This, adds Mr. Henderson, "is *the town's port*." Is this St. Pedro do Norte under another name? Or has St. Joze arisen since Mr. Luccock was in Brazil, and has St. Pedro been overwhelmed by the sand?

around afford melancholy evidence. On digging through the sandy soil, excellent clay is found in patches, which seems to indicate that the spot was once the bed of a lake which has been partially filled up by sand blown into it from the coast. On the sea-shore still exists a long line of pools, which will probably share the same fate. Nature has here produced," continues Mr. Luccock, "one of her slow, but irresistible operations. On a careful examination of the coast, it will convincingly appear, I think, that it has formerly proceeded from the *Castilhos Grandes* (two remarkable rocks so called, a little north of the Plata), by the west of the lake Mirim, the river Gonzales, and the Lagoa dos Patos, to the *morro* of Sta. Maria near Laguna;* and if so, all to the east of this line is made ground, formed by sand driven up by the ocean. The two lakes which form the chief features of this part of the country, have probably been created by the rivers which flow into them, repelling the sand accumulated at their mouths by the occasional impetuosity of their currents, until the bar was formed in the dead water produced by the stream and the ocean. Here the bank would gradually rise above the high-water mark, and compel the river to bend its course; and, by constant acquisition, would grow broader and longer, and at length form an estuary within it. Thus, the Saboyty (or Saboyaty), the Ygaroon (or Jaguaron), and the Piratirim were forced to join before they reached the ocean, and their united surplus waters to pass off northward, forming, in process of time, the river Gonzales. In like manner, the Jacuhy, the Camapuam, and other rivers, were compelled by accumulation of sand under the lee of Sta. Maria, to take a southern course, and produced the larger lake; but this discharging the greater quantity of

* See p. 279.

water, the stream has carried with it that of the smaller lake, and formed the Rio Grande, whose bar is still proceeding southward. At first, the estuary must consist of a number of pools, sometimes dry, and sometimes formed into one by an increase of water. Some of them would, by degrees, collect in their bottoms a quantity of mud, which, itself accumulating, and aided by the flying sand, would at length fill them up. Remnants of such lakes exist along both the peninsulas, and the frequent existence of clay beneath the sand, is an evidence that they were once numerous. Had marine or fresh-water vegetables been growing there, they would have been buried, but not destroyed, and perhaps, in the course of ages, have been converted into different kinds of coal." *

The Lagoa dos Patos, (which takes its name, according to Cazal, from a nation of Indians, but, Mr. Luccock informs us, that it is derived from a species of water-fowl so called,)† is the largest in Brazil, being 150 miles in length from N.E. to S.W.,‡ and thirty-five miles across at its greatest width. It is the recipient of almost all the streams that water the northern and eastern portions of the province. It is very shallow, and its water continues fresh as far as the island dos Marinheiros, near the port

* Notes, &c., pp. 233, 235, 236.

† "Towards evening, we saw a long line of dark-coloured birds flying across the lake, probably in the way to their nightly quarters. They were, in general, three, four, or five abreast, and continued passing for more than an hour: though the darkness prevented us from discerning the last of them, we reckoned that the line which we had seen was full ten miles in length. We fancied that they were urubues, (a species of vulture,) which are known to assemble, at the close of day, in large flocks; but our pilot said that they were *Patos*, a sort of diver, large, brown, and exceedingly numerous on the coast. From these, it seems, came the Portuguese name of the lake: the Brazilian one is lost."—*Notes*, p. 222.

‡ Mr. Luccock says, 130 miles in length from Cangazu, and from 40 to 45 in breadth from the mouth of the Camapuam.

of St. Pedro. Though encumbered with sand-banks and subject to violent squalls, it may be navigated with little anxiety. "I never heard," says Mr. Luccock, "of more than one vessel being lost upon it." The peninsula lying between the lake and the ocean, is low and level, and almost in a direct line on the eastern side, but forms various points and bays on the opposite one.* The western shore of the lake is bold, but not rugged, and is cut by several rivers, whose mouths furnish places of resort for yachts employed in bringing down produce to St. Pedro. The most important of these are, the Camapuam (Round Breasts) and the Jacuhy, or water of Jacues. The sources of the former are in the chain of low hills on the verge of the province, called the great Cochilha, which divide the tributary streams of the Rio Grande and those of the Uruguay: it flows with a rapid and disturbed current, interrupted by continued cataracts, for nearly a hundred miles, receiving fourteen streams from the south, and fifteen from the north, and falls into the lake about the middle of its western side, by five different channels, formed by four small islands, on which account it is often called the Five Fingers. Light vessels proceed fifteen miles up from its mouth, and, from its bold shores, bring down quantities of wheat. The Jacuhy, (sometimes called the Rio Pardo, which is one of its tributaries,) is a river of greater value. It rises in the province of St. Paulo, at the western border of the great table-land of Curitiba, being formed by the union of several streams which irrigate those elevated campos. After traversing the southern declivity of the general *serra* for a few leagues, it turns eastward, describing innumerable windings for a course

* Among these, the most southerly is the *Ponta do Mandana*, where have been found, Cazal states, vestiges of an Indian village and cemetery. Mr. Luccock sought for these sepulchres to the north of St. Pedro do Norte, but could discover no trace of them.

of thirty leagues, during which it collects the water of a number of smaller rivers, many of them navigable to some extent; it then suddenly bends towards the south, and after running fifteen miles in this direction, enters the western side of the lake about four leagues below its northern extremity. It is a fine, broad, and deep river, with lofty and diversified banks, and full of little islands. Being uninterrupted by cataracts, it is perfectly open to navigation, and Mr. Luccock was informed that it had been ascended several hundred miles. At the part where, suddenly bending towards the south, it receives the Cahy from the high plains to the north, it is two miles in width, spreading into a small lake.

On the northern bank of the Jacuhy, twenty-five miles from its mouth, and forty-three leagues north of St. Pedro, is the pleasant town of Porto Alegre, (generally written Portalegre,) the present capital of the province. It is situated on a declivity, and commands a fine view of the river and the surrounding country. The houses are well-built, white-washed, and formed into streets, most of them broad and paved. The government-house and public offices are on the summit of the hill. It has a church dedicated to *Nossa Senhora Madre de Deos* (Mother of God), a chapel *Das Dores* (of Griefs), and an hospital for orphans, and is the residence of the governor of the province, an *ouvidor* (sheriff), a *juiz de fora*, who is a sort of mayor, and a vicar-general; there are also royal Latin professors. It has a dock-yard, which is plentifully supplied with timber from the banks of the streams that fall into the Jacuhy. "As a capital," says Mr. Luccock, "its influence is wide: as a seat of commerce, it commands a large tract of country and many navigable rivers. Several Englishmen have long been settled round this favoured spot; but the country is not yet sufficiently advanced in the common arts of civilized life, to render it

a desirable residence. One of them has endeavoured to improve its agriculture, by introducing the plough on the banks of the Tacoary, about ninety miles above Portalegre; I fear without much effect. This part of the province is, however, daily and rapidly improving; though the people still want education, and are yet more destitute of moral and religious culture. This last want will hardly be matter of surprise, when it is considered, that a district extending over nearly six degrees of latitude, and four of longitude, comprising more than forty thousand square miles, is divided into five parishes, each containing five millions of acres; and all of them under the spiritual care of the bishop of Rio de Janeiro, whose residence is not within five hundred miles of the nearest part of this his charge.

"One great bar to improvement is, that much of the interior is still in the hands of the native Indians, whose animosity to white people is of the bitterest sort, and their purposes of vengeance for injuries received, have been so long bequeathed from father to son, as to be rooted in their hearts, as firmly as the colour is attached to their skin. Under the influence of this passion, they destroy every thing belonging to Europeans or their descendants, which falls in their way: even the cow and the dog are not spared. For such outrages they pay dearly; small forts or military stations being placed round the colonised parts of the district, from whence a war of plunder and extermination is carried on against them. In this warfare, not only are fire-arms made use of, but the *lasso*, dogs, and all the stratagems which are usually employed against beasts of prey." *

The road to Portalegre from St. Pedro do Norte, after crossing the broad and deep river Capibary, leads round

* Notes, pp. 228, 229.

the head of the lake. Mr. Luccock mentions as one of the chief places in this route, the small but pleasantly situated village of Mustardos, near which it was attempted to found an English settlement, but the speculation failed. * The road to Laguna approaches the coast, running through a swampy and uninteresting region, to the ferry over the *Rio Tramandahy* (or *Tamandua*, Ant-eater river), which is, in fact, only the channel by which a great number of lakes discharge their waters. The passage is often dangerous, and the ferry is, like all the rest in this route, in a most wretched state. Twelve leagues further is the mouth of the Mampituba, between which and the Tramandahy, fourteen small rivers of crystalline water discharge themselves into the sea. Here is a military station, at which passports and luggage are examined, the Mampituba being the boundary between the provinces of Rio Grande and Sta. Catherina. The journey from St. Pedro to Sta. Catherina, a distance of about 400 miles, has been performed by native horsemen in four days.

We return to St. Pedro, in order to start from thence to the westward, and afterwards to explore the southern confines of Brazil.

The Lake Mirim (small lake), which discharges itself into the Lake of Patos by the channel called the river of St. Gonzales, is itself upwards of ninety miles in length, by twenty-five at its greatest breadth. It is very shallow, and, in the rainy season, widely extends its borders. The Gonzales is fifty miles in length; it is wide and handsome,

* No village of this name is mentioned by Mr. Henderson; but, on the eastern side of the peninsula, is the lake of Mostardas, better known by the name of Peixe, nine leagues long, with little width, disemboguing into the sea at an elbow of land, that opens and closes annually. The settlement is, probably, not far from its outlet. This lake is but one of the continued chain that extends northward, along the foot of the cordillera, to the river Mampituba.

and navigable by yachts of from 50 to 70 tons burthen, who by this channel pass into the Lake Mirim, and thence ascend the Jaguaron and the Saboyaty to the fertile country lying at the back of Monte Video and Maldonado. By this means, goods are distributed through the interior, and cross the mountains even to the Uruguay. Between the eastern shore of Lake Mirim and the Atlantic, another long and narrow lake extends for eighty or ninety miles in a line nearly parallel to the coast. It is called, Mr. Luccock says, the Bay of Mangueira, (Manguein ?) " not the one mentioned before, but another of the same name." * Between this and the Lake Mirim, the road passes.

Six leagues to the south-west of St. Pedro do Sul is the *arraial* of Povo Novo (new town), " ornamented with a hermitage of Our Lady of Necessity." The erection of this church has drawn inhabitants to the spot, who are stated by Cazal to be husbandmen, originally from the Azores. " On what their labour is bestowed," remarks Mr. Luccock, " I know not: there are certainly no marks of it in the cultivation of the soil. Our Lady of Necessity is their patroness, and liberally has she distributed her favours among them." A few miles further in this direction, the country greatly improves, exhibiting not only some fine pastures and stately trees, but also a few well-built farm-houses. The plain of St. Gonzales, to which it leads, is a level tract of rich meadow land, upwards of twenty miles long, and seven broad: it is in general, however, " incommoded with a hot, hazy, oppressive atmosphere." The river which gives name to the plain, is nearly as broad as the Thames at London, and is said to be in some parts not less than twenty-four fathoms deep. Here Mr. Luccock and his party started

* Mr. Henderson writes it *Mangliera*, and states, that it is 80 miles long, about four broad, and empties itself, at the northern extremity, by an outlet called *Arroio Thahim*.

an *emu* (the American ostrich), and putting their horses to their utmost speed, they gave it chase. "The bird," he says, "quickly left us far behind, then closed its wings, and stalked on in careless security. Though the neighbouring sands are the natural haunt of these birds, they were now numerous on the plains, having been driven hither, I suppose, by dry weather; we had in consequence several chases of the same kind, all of them equally fruitless. On turning the corner of a wood, we suddenly came within thirty yards of an emu, followed by about sixty young ones, which were, probably, several collected broods. She marched off with a stately step, carrying her head in a sort of semicircle, and looking at us first with one eye, then with the other. We again followed at full gallop; but, as the pursuit continued, the distance sensibly increased. The young birds clustered together, fluttered much, and advanced with evident haste: the pace of the old one was dignified and steady; she shewed no marks of weakness, fear, or stupidity; on the contrary, while concerned for the safety of her charge, she seemed desirous to save them from unnecessary fatigue. Our guide entertained the common opinion of the country, that it is the male bird which in this way guides and protects the young; but, as more agreeable to the order of nature, I have not hesitated to speak of the leader as a female.

"I kept one of these birds, for some time, within a spacious stockado, until it became familiar and occasionally impertinent; and he allowed me to stride over his back, and could just support my weight. Mounted by a boy of twelve years of age, he could run, and was easily guided by turning his head to the direction in which the rider wished him to proceed." *

Having crossed the Gonzales, there extends towards the

* Notes, p. 210.

north, between the Passo dos Negros and the Lagoa dos Patos, a broad patch of swampy land, "the accumulated sediment of ages." In these fens are several large farming establishments: that of Pellotas, which stands about six or seven miles above the mouth of the river of that name, is said to occupy ten square leagues, a moderate extent for a grazing farm in Rio Grande. Towards the west, the country assumes a different aspect. Instead of sands partly consolidated and covered with the alluvial deposite brought down by the rivers, the land presents a gently varied surface and a rich loamy soil. An extensive tract, famous for its fine cattle, is comprehended under the name of *Charqueados*, derived from the "*charqued*" beef which is prepared in this district for exportation.* "Some idea of the immense quantity thus prepared, may be formed from the fact," says Mr. Luccock, "that, in one year, an individual, Joze Antonio dos Anjos, slaughtered 54,000 head of cattle, and charqued the flesh. The piles of bones which lay in his premises, far surpassed my utmost conceptions; and there were thousands of *urubues*, the vulture of South America, flying round and feeding on the offal. During the slaughtering season, it is not uncommon for large packs of dogs to make their appearance, and assist the vultures in picking the bones; and it is said that the ounce will do the same."

In the beginning of the seventeenth century, this province was covered with cattle, notwithstanding the devastation made among the herds by the Indians and the ounce. The conquerors, however, as if imagining the

* "When the cattle are killed and skinned, the flesh is taken off from the sides in one broad piece, something like a flitch of bacon; it is then slightly sprinkled with salt, and dried in the sun. In that state, it is the common food of the peasantry in the hotter parts of Brazil, is in itself by no means to be despised, and, as it will keep long, forms an excellent sea-stock."

stock to be inexhaustible, commenced a system of wanton destruction, "resembling that of the tiger and the wolf in the sheep-fold." This havoc was directed principally against the calves. One seldom sufficed for the dinner of two comrades, because both, perhaps, wished for the tongue, and, rather than divide it, they would slaughter a second. There were men who would kill an animal in the morning, in order to breakfast on broiled kidneys; and, not to be incommoded by carrying home any part of the meat, would kill another for dinner. "There was no banquet without veal only a few days old." * At length, both the Spanish and the Portuguese governors found it necessary to interfere; and an edict was passed by the governor of Monte Video, about the year 1650, prohibiting the slaughter of calves and of all oxen under five years old. This partly checked the mischief, though it has not put an end to the wasteful consumption; and in some parts, owing to the warfare carried on near the banks of the Plata, the *charqued* beef has at times been scarce.

In 1802, there were reckoned among the subjects of the Portuguese government in Rio Grande, 539 proprietors of land, consisting of two classes, distinguished as *fazendeiros*, farmers, and *lavradores*, husbandmen. The latter, who breed only what is necessary for their own consumption, possess generally about two square leagues of land: the former will farm from eight to ten leagues; and some of these fazendas, Mr. Luccock states, are reported to extend to a hundred square leagues, or nearly 600,000 acres!

"To each three square leagues are allotted four or five thousand head of cattle, six men, and a hundred horses;†

* Henderson, p. 125.

† In a fazenda of three leagues, it is computed, Mr. Henderson says, that one thousand young cattle, male and female, are branded,

though, according to circumstances, such as the distance from navigable waters, or from church, there must be a variety in the number of oxen kept for the business of a farm. The proportion of horses will appear a very large one; but it is to be remembered, that they cost nothing in keeping, as they are turned out on the plains; that no one about the farm, not even a slave, ever goes the shortest distance on foot; and that each manager will change his horse two or three times in a day. About a hundred cows are allowed for the supply of milk, butter, cheese, and veal, to a farm of the average size. Hogs are usually found near the houses, but little care is taken of them: they wander about, root up the earth, devour reptiles, and make a good part of their subsistence on the waste parts of the cattle slaughtered. There are few sheep, and they are remarkably light and ill made, with a short, ordinary wool; which, however, might easily be improved. This wool is at present used, partly, unstripped from the skins, as saddle-covers and the like; partly, for the stuffing of beds and mattresses. The country is so thinly peopled, its inhabitants have so little liking to mutton, and the wild dogs and other beasts and birds of prey are so numerous, that there can be little inducement to increase the flocks."

"The breed of sheep," says Mr. Henderson, "would, if attended to, much exceed that of cattle, in consequence of their generally producing two at a birth; they, however, are not numerous, few farmers possessing one thousand head, and the major part not any. Nothing here appears so easy and cheap as the multiplication of this animal. For the purpose of shepherding a flock of one thousand, two cur-dogs are sufficient, bred up in the following mode.

or marked, annually: the number sent off or killed, may be judged of from this calculation.

As soon as they are whelped, the lambs of a ewe are killed, the puppies are put to her, and she suckles them until she becomes habituated to treat them as her young, when, upon opening their eyes, and seeing no other benefactor, they attach themselves to her, and play with the lambs as if they were of the same species. Nothing is ever given them to eat: they are shut in the fold with the sheep, and, on obtaining strength and vigour to attend the flock, they are suffered to go at large, when they accompany it to the field. In a little time, and without more instruction, they are so familiarized with the sheep, that they never separate from them. When it happens that a ewe lambs in the field, and the lamb cannot accompany the mother, in consequence of its not yet having sufficient strength to follow her, one of the dogs watches near, and, if he finds that the lamb cannot follow the mother to the flock, he carries it in his mouth, without doing it the least harm. No other animal or unknown person can approach the sheep of which these dogs are the guardians, without the risk of being attacked. The other domestic dogs and the hordes of the *chimarroe* dogs are the greatest enemies to the flock: against them and the birds of prey, which pick out the eyes of the lambs, the vigilance of the watch-dogs is requisite." *

The same *fazendeiros* breed also droves of horses and mules: the latter are most lucrative, a male one being of at least double the value of a horse. So low, however, is the value of land and of stock, that Mr. Luccock was offered *an island* in the Lake of Patos, comprehending eighteen or twenty square miles, including its buildings and cattle, the latter warranted to exceed 4000 head,—for 8000 cruzadoes, or about 900*l.* sterling, and this in payment for goods: the wood and fisheries were not deemed

* Henderson's History of Brazil, p. 128.

worth taking into the calculation. Declining the estate, Mr. Luccock offered the proprietor *the same sum* for the hides of the cattle alone, provided he would deliver them at St. Pedro, within a month, fit for exportation. The reply given was, that hands could not be found to slaughter the cattle, and cure the hides; and that, if they were to be obtained, the work and wages would put the owner to an expense exceeding the sum offered!

Mr. Luccock was here witness to the Brazilian amusement of an *ox-chase*, a sport not less hazardous, and perhaps not much less refined, than the pleasures of an English stag-hunt.

"After a ride of three or four miles on a large open plain, we found about 400 head of cattle. We rode gently round, to bring them into a more compact body, and made the animal which was to be chased, distinctly known to every individual of the party. Our settled object was to drive him to the house; and, to render the sport as complete as possible, the *lasso* * was not to be

* "The *lasso* is made of narrow thongs, plaited in the same way as the bridles, and is about seven or eight yards long. One end of it is firmly fixed to the hinder part of the saddle, generally on the right side: at the other end is an iron ring, about two inches in diameter. The horseman, about to use the *lasso*, forms a sort of running-noose, by passing a portion of it through the ring; this is taken in the right hand, so as that the ring may be at the opposite part of the circle; the noose is then swung with care over the head, until the extreme part of it, including the ring, acquires a considerable momentum. The instrument, thus prepared, as the man advances towards his selected victim, is in due time discharged, carries off the remainder of the string, which before hung loosely in coils on the fingers of the left hand, and seldom fails to entangle the beast. A well-trained horse, though at full speed when the *lasso* is thrown, instantly stops, and, turning round, pulls against the animal, which is now attached to him. The balls are three in number, round, and nearly three inches in diameter. The external part of each is a sort of purse, made of hide, rendered pliable by soaking: the purse is filled with sand, and the aperture drawn

used until there appeared a probability that he would otherwise escape. Some of the people then dashed into the midst of the herd, attentively observing the selected animal. One half of the oxen were thus driven at once from the spot, and others, which chose to do so, were permitted to follow without molestation; but, wherever the victim turned, a horseman met him, and stopped his career. The work was easy until the remaining group was reduced to about twenty, which then made violent attempts to rejoin their comrades, and fiercely attacked the huntsmen who intercepted them. In a short time, four of them, being hard pressed, plunged into some watery ground about two miles from the house, and among them was the object of the chase. When driven from the water, this small number were more harassed than before, and, perceiving their danger, exerted themselves with redoubled violence. Sometimes we were obliged to ride hard; and great coolness and address were necessary to prevent their escape behind us and into a wood, which we were now approaching. In this last respect, our efforts were vain: they gained this refuge, and we could no longer act in concert. The wood was full of

close. In drying, the leather contracts, and the whole becomes as hard as a stone. To each ball a string is attached, three or four feet long, made of plaited thongs, like the *lasso;* and the three strings are united by a knot, at two feet distance from the balls. This may be called the handle of the instrument; for the person using it takes the knot in his right hand, and having given it the necessary velocity, by swinging it over his head with all his might, throws it at the legs of the horse or ox which he wishes to secure. In their progress, the balls spread to the utmost distance which the strings will allow, and, reaching the leg, generally pass round it; and though, perhaps, only slightly entangling the animal, sufficiently impede its flight."

The custom was derived from the Maraocato and other Indian tribes, who used the *lasso* and balls with great effect against Mendonca, when he landed and founded the city of Buenos Ayres.

thick bushes of myrtle, and many trees spread their arms horizontally seven or eight feet from the ground. It was matter of high gratification, as well as wonder, to observe how our huntsmen rounded the bushes, and bent under the branches, so as sometimes to hang on the sides of their horses. Though unable to follow, I soon encountered our chief, who had made an unsuccessful cast with his *lasso*, and was disentangling it from the branches of a tree. I shall never forget the ardour and rapidity with which he afterwards darted and wheeled among the trees, nor lose the conviction fixed upon my mind, what execution such men, so trained, must be capable of in a country like this. My musings were soon interrupted by reaching the beach, and seeing at a distance our young hero, with the ox securely attached to his horse by the *lasso*, and leading the captive towards the house. The instrument had gone round his horns, and was fixed close to the crown of his head. The animal, thus entangled, advanced with the most malicious vexation, and made many ferocious efforts to gore the horse, which had before pursued, and now led him; but the wary creature, which had often before been yoked to an unnatural and violent mate, kept his eye upon the ox, and pulled at the *lasso* so as to keep it always on the stretch, and himself two springs in advance. In his precautions he was greatly assisted by his rider, who, with equal care, watched the maddening spirit of the beast, and gave signals to the horse. Convinced, at length, that his attempts to gore his leader were vain, the ox became sullen, and was partly dragged onward. While he was in this mood, the horse passed to the right of a detached bush, and the ox, by a sudden spring, got nearly abreast with him on the left: thus, the *lasso* was brought over his back, and he was enabled to employ his utmost might to draw the horse round the bush; the horse also used all his power to

counteract this manœuvre; and thus the great strength of the *lasso* was proved. By this time, the whole party was again collected, and another *lasso* applied to assist in conducting the captive, which, seemingly conscious that he was completely subdued, walked along quietly. A boat had just reached the beach; and the people were still on board, when the treacherous animal, as soon as he came near enough, made an unexpected attack, and caused them to tumble, one over another, into the water, to the great amusement of the spectators.

"Returning to the hut, after a chase of three hours, milk and fruit were served to us in abundance; while the beast was taken from his former bondage and tied to a post, where I found him bellowing with madness, and still furiously striving to release himself. A man now came forward with an instrument, called a *facam*,* somewhat resembling both a large carving-knife and a short sword; and, warning every one to be on his guard, passed near the heels of the ox, and endeavoured, by a back-handed stroke, to hough him. The attempt was clumsily made, and the beast, though wounded, was not disabled. Another took the instrument, and used it with greater effect; when the ox gave a desperate kick at the operator, and, snapping the tendon, fell on his haunches. A third then drew a sharp knife across his throat: blood copiously followed; and, with a deep bellow, expressive of rage and agony, he yielded up his life. Immediately the people set about skinning the beast, and preparing a part of him for dinner. The former operation was performed in a workman-like manner; and the skin, as it was taken off, being carefully stretched upon the ground, preserved the flesh from blood and dirt. During this process, fires had been kindled, and had burned down to clear embers.

* *Faca* is the Portuguese word for a knife of any kind.

Slices of flesh were then cut off from the ribs, as the choicest part, for the master and his guests, and roasted at a fire apart; afterwards, the attendants helped themselves as they pleased, and cooked their portion after their own modes.

"Horses are trained for the exercises of the field, by fastening a dry hide to the back part of the saddle, and allowing it to trail on the ground. As the horse moves, the hide rattles, and the noise alarms him: he attempts to fly, when it beats against his heels, and he kicks at it violently; but, soon convinced that all his alarm and rage are fruitless, he learns to be patient and quiet. In this state, a person mounts and compels him to move forward; at first gently, afterwards at an increased pace. He begins with trampling upon the hide; but this incommodes him, perhaps almost throws him down backwards; he then sets down his feet more carefully and safely. The contrivance induces him also to keep an eye turned on the object behind; while the rider takes him over rough or boggy ground, obliging him at the same time to look forward and mark where he is going. Thus he forms a habit of quickly discerning danger, and avoiding it, from whatever quarter it may come. So much are the Brazilian horses in general fenced against alarms, that I hardly ever met with one of the description which we call skittish." *

The country south of the Piratinim (Little Fish river), extending to the northern shores of the Plata, varies little from the northern part of the province; only the eminences are somewhat more lofty. Cape St. Ma[illegible], the first point which presents itself, and indeed the only one along this line of coast, is a flat, sandy tongue of land. What is sometimes mistaken for it, is the singular group of

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 224-7.

rocks, a little to the north of the Cape, called the Great Castelhos, from their supposed resemblance, at a distance, to castles built on the beach. They consist of three large masses of naked granite, rising about a hundred feet from the water, with perpendicular sides and roundish tops. They are backed by low, woody hills. A flat, sandy beach extends northward of these, to the *Castelhos Pequenos* (Little Castelhos), near which is the fort of Santa Teresa. From this point, the road to Maldonado along the southern coast, is represented by Mr. Luccock as very delightful, passing through a country diversified with small hills well wooded and watered, and abounding with deer, but thinly peopled. The greater part of the inhabitants were at this period (1808-1813) Spanish subjects, and strongly prejudiced against the Brazilians. Passing westward from the *Castelhos Grandes*, we first meet with marshes and sandy plains, forming a sort of margin to the country, nearly ten miles in breadth. "Beyond this begins an elevation of about a hundred feet, which, though slightly varied with hill and dale, appears, from the sea, so nearly level, and its declivity so regular, as to convert the work of winds and waves into the appearance of an artificial embankment. It terminates before we reach the rocky coast of Maldonado."

The town of Maldonado stands on the brow of a hill gently rising to the height of 250 feet above the sea-level: it is fifteen leagues west of Cape St. Mary. From the sea, it has no very attractive appearance. Immediately off the coast lie two islands: one of them, called *Lobos* (Wolves' Island), displays but little verdure, being almost all rocks and stones, but has good water, and is about two miles in circumference; * the other, *Gorita*, has a

* Mr. Lindley gives the latitude of the island of Lobos, 35° 1′ S.; the longitude, *east point*, 54° 31′ 30″; *west point*, 54° 35′ W.

few buildings upon it, and under its lee is the harbour, the beach of which is exposed to a heavy surf, which renders landing sometimes dangerous, and even impracticable. There are two entrances: that on the eastern side of the island is very narrow; that on the west is broad and deep, and to small vessels perfectly safe; but, about midway, there is a rock with twenty-four feet water upon it. The anchoring-ground is near the centre of the bay, where lies the wreck of a British ship, the Agamemnon. The town is thus described by Mr. Luccock, as it appeared in 1808-9. "The principal buildings form a quadrangle, on the north side of which is a considerable *estalagem*, or inn; on the south side, a church, which, when finished, will be, for such a place, magnificent: the common habitations occupying the rest of the square, are built of brick, and covered with straw. The houses in the streets issuing from the square, or running parallel with its sides, are chiefly low and constructed of earth. The whole number is about two hundred and fifty; that of the inhabitants, from eight hundred to a thousand. It is manifest, how much ecclesiastical interests prevail here over civil ones; though the seemingly incongruous splendour of the church may in part be vindicated by the consideration, that it is a sort of cathedral of an extensive district, called by the name of St. Carlos, to whom the church is dedicated. A village bearing the same name, lies about nine miles from the town, towards the north-east, and appears to have been formerly the chief place in the district." *

In the track from Maldonado to Monte Video, the traveller soon after passes over the only lofty ground in the neighbourhood, which is part of the ridge, running nearly

* Mr. Luccock probably refers to *Pueblo Novo*, two leagues to the N. of Maldonado, "founded," Cazal says, "for the habitation of the Portuguese prisoners of Colonia." It has a church called St. Carlos.

north and south for the distance of 400 miles, called the Great Cochilha, and constituting one of the great abutments of the table-land of southern Brazil. Its southern extremity forms the bold shore of Ponte Negro, which presents a perpendicular face of 300 feet above the water, terminating in three distinct summits, which distinguish it from every other point in the estuary. Approached from the east, its jagged heights are visible as far off as fifty miles. To the east and west, it sends out many spurs, which divide the streams originating in its elevated parts, but they are not so lofty as the ridge itself. Descending from this height, the traveller enters on a plain intersected by short, inconstant streams, but destitute of wood. The road winds round the bay of Santa Rosa, "a dangerous bight for vessels, when the wind blows fiercely from the south-east, and pours into it the whole weight of the Southern Ocean." As he approaches the city, the mountain which gives name to the place, and is constantly in view, becomes a more prominent object. Mr. Luccock thus describes its appearance: "It stands close to the water, unsupported by buttresses, unattached to any ridge; it is of a blackish-green hue, of a formal conical shape, and its towering head is crowned with a small building and a signal-staff. It presents itself as the firm guardian of the mighty Plata, and deserves to be accounted one of the finest of military stations, if the water, said to spring upon it, be sufficiently abundant. Possibly it may become, what it seems fitted to be,—one of the pivots on which the commerce of the world shall hereafter turn. Its importance is well understood by Brazilian statesmen, and nothing short of overwhelming force will avail to wrench it out of their hands."

Mr. Mawe was at Monte Video at the eventful period of the British expedition against Buenos Ayres, in 1808.

It was then in the possession of the Spaniards, and that gentleman had nearly fallen a victim to the national prejudices and unprincipled conduct of the governor. While he was detained here, at first a loose prisoner, and afterwards a prisoner at large, he had but too much leisure to acquire some knowledge of the town and its vicinity; and we shall avail ourselves of his description, by far the most accurate that we possess, of this part of the coast.

"Monte Video is a tolerably well-built town, standing on a gentle elevation at the extremity of a small peninsula, and is walled entirely round. Its population amounts to between 15,000 and 20,000 souls. The harbour, though shoal, and quite open to the *pamperos*, or south-west gales, is the best in the Rio de la Plata; it has a very soft bottom of deep mud. When the wind continues for some time at north-east, ships drawing twelve feet water are frequently a-ground for several days, so that the harbour cannot be called a good one for vessels above three hundred or four hundred tons.

"There are but few capital buildings; the town in general consists of houses of one story, paved with bricks, and provided with very poor conveniences. In the square is a cathedral, very handsome, but awkwardly situated: opposite to it, is an edifice divided into a town-house, or *cabildo*, and a prison. The streets, having no pavement, are always either clouded with dust or loaded with mud, as the weather happens to be dry or wet. In the season of drought, the want of conduits for water is a serious inconvenience, the well, which principally supplies the town, being two miles distant.*

* Mr. Henderson says: "The inhabitants drink rain-water collected in cisterns, which are formed in the inner courts common to the houses; and this water is pure and excellent. There are also pits dug near the sea-side, whence water is brought in carts for the

" Provisions here are cheap, and in great abundance. Beef in particular is very plentiful, and, though rarely fat or fine, makes excellent soup. The best parts of the meat may, indeed, be called tolerable, but they are by no means tender. The pork is not eatable. Such is the profusion of flesh-meat, that the vicinity for two miles round, and even the purlieus of the town itself, present filthy spectacles of bones and raw flesh at every step, which feed immense flocks of sea-gulls, and in summer breed myriads of flies, to the great annoyance of the inhabitants, who are obliged at table to have a servant or two continually employed in fanning the dishes with feathers, to drive away those troublesome intruders.

" The inhabitants, particularly the creoles, are humane and well-disposed, when not actuated by political or religious prejudices. Their habits of life are much the same as those of their brethren in Old Spain, and seem to proceed from the same remarkable union of two opposite but not incompatible qualities, indolence and temperance. The ladies are generally affable and polite, extremely fond of dress, and very neat and cleanly in their persons. They adopt the English costume at home, but go abroad usually in black, and always covered with a large veil or mantle. At mass, they invariably appear in black silk, bordered with deep fringes. They delight in conversation, for which their vivacity eminently qualifies them, and they are very courteous to strangers.

" The climate of Monte Video is humid. The weather, in the winter months (June, July, and August,) is at times boisterous, and the air in that season is generally

supply of the town." On the authority of the *Corografia Brazilica*, he makes the town, or rather " city," 130 miles W. of Cape Mary, and 120 miles E. of Buenos Ayres. It stands, according to Mr. Lindley, in latitude 34° 55′ S., longitude 56° 4′ W.

keen and piercing. In summer, the serenity of the atmosphere is frequently interrupted by tremendous thunderstorms, preceded by dreadful lightning, which frequently damages the shipping, and followed by heavy rain, which sometimes destroys the harvest. The heat is troublesome, and is rendered more so to strangers, by the swarms of mosquitoes, which infest every apartment.

" The town stands on a basis of granite, the feldspar of which is for the most part of an opaque milk-white colour, in a decomposing state; in some places, it is found of a flesh-red colour and crystallized. The mica is generally large and foliated, in many places imperfectly crystallized. It is obvious, that the excessive quantity of mud in the harbour and throughout the banks of the river, cannot have been formed from this stratum. The high mount on the opposite side of the bay, which is crowned with a light-house, and gives name to the town, is principally composed of clay-slate, in laminæ perpendicular to the horizon. This substance appears much like basalt in texture, but its fracture is less conchoidal; it decomposes into an imperfect species of wacké, and ultimately into ferruginous clay, from beds of which water is observed to flow in various parts of the mountain.

" The vicinity of Monte Video is agreeably diversified with low, gently sloping hills, and long valleys watered by beautiful rivulets; but the prospects they afford are rarely enlivened by traces of cultivation: few enclosures are seen, except the gardens of the principal merchants. The same defect appears in a north-east direction from the town, where similar varieties of hill, valley, and water prevail, and seem to want only the embellishment of sylvan scenery to complete the landscape. Some wood, indeed, grows on the margin of the *Riachuclo*, which is used for the building of hovels and for fuel. There is a

pleasant stream about ten leagues from Monte Video, called the Louza, the banks of which seem to invite the labour of the planter, and would certainly produce abundance of timber. It is to be remarked, that the almost entire want of this article here, occasions great inconvenience and expense: wood for mechanical purposes is extremely scarce, and planks are so dear that hardly one house with a boarded floor is to be found.

"In this vicinity, the farms are of great extent; few are so small as six miles in length, by a league in width. Such is the scarcity of wood, that the land-marks, when not already designated by nature in a chain of hills, a rivulet, or a valley, are made by ranges of stones of a peculiar form. The *quintas* (or farms owned by gentlemen), with the country-houses built upon them, as rural retreats for their proprietors resident in Monte Video, were extremely pleasant and agreeable; the gardens were full of fine flowers and fruits, and every thing about these establishments indicated so much peace, harmony, and good-neighbourhood, as to make an impression on the mind of a stranger equally pleasing and indelible. But the scene, alas! has been changed through the intestine discords produced by a revolutionary war; and the colony has been reduced from a state of happiness to one of distress and wretchedness. The inhabitants of the interior, having been instigated to plunder each other until nothing remained, ranged themselves under the banners of the predatory chieftain Artigas, and formed a desperate banditti, who robbed and frequently murdered all they met; drove the peaceable inhabitants from their farms, plundered their houses, took away their cattle, reduced the rich to poverty, and the poor to wretchedness, so as almost to desolate this once flourishing colony. A man who, but a few months before possessed 100,000 head of cattle, was driven from his estate, and obliged to purchase, at the price of

one shilling per pound, the meat which he had formerly left in the slaughter-house, having killed his beasts merely for their hides; so that the necessaries of life, which were once to be procured almost gratuitously, became extravagantly dear; and the horrors of approaching famine were superadded to those of anarchy and spoliation."

At the distance of about forty leagues from Monte Video, in a north-easterly direction, the ridge of hills already mentioned, gradually lessens and disappears, and the country opens finely on the traveller's left, intersected by numerous rivulets. Mr. Mawe's place of destination was the establishment of a noble-minded Spaniard, situated at the junction of two small streams, which form the Barriga Negra, a river flowing into the Lagoa Mirim, which gives its name to the estate.

"Barriga Negra is distant about 160 miles north-east from Monte Video, about 120 from Maldonado, and 90 from the town of Minas. The country around it is mountainous, well-watered, and not destitute of wood. The banks of the streams are thickly covered with trees, rarely, however, of large size, for the creeping plants, interweaving with the shoots, check their growth, and form an impenetrable thicket. Here are numbers of great breeding-estates, many of which are stocked with from 60,000 to 200,000 head of cattle. These are guarded principally by men from Paraguay, called Peons, who live in hovels built for the purpose at convenient distances. Ten thousand head are allotted to four or five Peons, whose business it is to collect them every morning and evening, and once or twice a month to drive them into pens, where they are kept for a night. The cattle by this mode of management are soon tamed: a ferocious or vicious beast I never saw among them. Breeding is alone attended to; neither butter nor cheese is made, and

milk is scarcely known as an article of food. The constant diet of the people, morning, noon, and night, is beef, eaten almost always without bread, and frequently without salt. This habitual subsistence on strong food would probably engender diseases, were it not corrected by frequently taking an infusion of their favourite herb *matté*, at all times of the day, when inclination calls for it.

"The dwellings of the Peons are in general very wretched, the walls being formed by a few upright posts interwoven with small branches of trees, plastered with mud inside and out, and the roof thatched with long grass and rushes. The door is also of wicker-work, or, in its stead, a green hide stretched on sticks, and removable at pleasure. The furniture of these poor hovels consists of a few skulls of horses, which are made to serve for seats; and of a stretched hide to lie upon. The principal, if not the sole cooking utensil, is a spit or rod of iron, stuck in the ground in an oblique position, so as to incline over the fire. The beef, when spitted, is left to roast until the part next the fire is supposed to be done enough; then its position is altered, and the change is occasionally repeated, until the whole is cooked. The juices of the meat, by this mode of roasting, help to mend the fire, and indeed the people seem to think that they are fit for nothing else. The meat, which is naturally poor and coarse, being thus dried to a cake, bears little affinity to the boasted roast beef of England. Fuel in some parts is so extremely scarce, that the following strange expedient is resorted to for a supply. As the mares in this country are kept solely for breeding, and are never trained to labour, they generally exceed, in a great degree, the due proportion; a flock of them is frequently killed, and their carcases soon becoming dry, are used as firing, (with the exception of

the hides and tails,) which, when properly prepared, are packed for exportation.

" The Peons are chiefly emigrants from Paraguay, and it is a singular fact, that, among the numbers that are here settled, very few women are to be found. A person may travel in these parts for days together without seeing or hearing of a single female in the course of his journey. To this circumstance may be attributed the total absence of domestic comfort in the dwellings of these wretched men, and the gloomy apathy observable in their dispositions and habits. It is true, that the mistress of an estate may occasionally visit it for a few months, but she is obliged during her stay to live in great seclusion, on account of the dreadful consequences to be apprehended from being so exposed.

" The climate and soil are equally favourable for the growth of grapes, apples, peaches, and, in short, every species of fruit belonging to the temperate zone, but these are known here only as rarities. That inestimable root, the potatoe, would thrive abundantly, if once introduced; but, though much has been said in recommendation of it, the people remain totally averse to this or any other proposal for improving their means of subsistence, and seem to wish for nothing beyond the bare necessaries of life. Indeed, the state of society among them ens those ties which naturally attach men to the soil on which they are accustomed to subsist. The Peons, brought from Paraguay in their infancy, grow up to the age of manhood in a state of servitude, uncheered by domestic comfort. At that period, they generally wander, in search of employment, toward the coast, where money is in greater plenty. There is no specie in circulation in the interior: their wages are paid monthly in notes on Monte Video. The men, for the most part, are an honest and

harmless race, though quite as liable, from the circumstances of their condition, to acquire habits of gambling, as the higher classes of the people, numbers of whom fall victims to that seductive vice.* Such, indeed, is their excessive propensity to gambling, that they frequently carry cards in their pocket, and, when an opportunity occurs, form parties, and retire to a convenient place, where one of them spreads his *poncho* or mantle on the ground, in lieu of a table. When the loser has parted with his money, he will stake his clothes, so that the game generally continues until one of them goes away almost naked. This bad practice often leads to serious consequences. I once observed a party playing in the neighbourhood of a chapel after mass had been said, when the clergyman came and kicked away the cards in order to put an end to the game. On this, one of the Peons rose up, and retiring a few paces, thus accosted the intruder: 'Father, I will obey you as a priest; but' (laying his hand on his knife) 'you must beware how you molest our diversion.' The clergyman knew the desperate character of these men too well to remonstrate, and retired very hastily, not a little chagrined. On another occasion, a Peon was gambling with a Spanish corporal in the prison-yard, when a dispute arising, the latter drew his sword on his unarmed antagonist, and wounded him so severely in the arm, that he was obliged to undergo am-

* There would seem to be at least exceptions to their honesty, however, and their harmlessness is equally questionable. Mr. Mawe, on learning that Monte Video was in the possession of the English, had planned his escape from his friendly host at Barriga Negra, in concert with two Peons whom he had hired and bribed to be his guides. He owed his life, there can be little doubt, to the intimation conveyed to him by an unknown person, that they had been overheard planning his murder. "You know," he was told, "they are both gamblers, and one of them killed two men last year."

putation the day following. It is usual for a Peon who has been fortunate at play, to go to Monte Video, and clothe himself anew in the shop of a slop-seller. While the shopman is looking out the articles he calls for, he deliberately places his dollars on the counter, in separate piles, assigning each to its destined purpose. He then retires to a corner, and attires himself. An unfortunate comrade invariably attends him, who examines his cast clothes, and, if better than his own, puts them on. After passing a few days in idleness, he sets out on his return home, where he appears in his new dress.

"The common dress of the people is such as might be expected from their indolence and poverty. They generally go without shoes and stockings: indeed, as they rarely go on foot, they have seldom occasion for shoes. Some of them, particularly the Peons, make a kind of boots from the raw skins of young horses, which they frequently kill for this sole purpose. When the animal is dead, they cut the skin round the thigh, about eighteen inches above the gambrel; having stripped it, they stretch and dress it until it loses the hair and becomes quite white. The lower part, which covered the joint, forms the heel, and the extremity is tied or sewed up to cover the toes. These boots, when newly finished, are of a delicate colour, and very generally admired. The rest of their apparel consists of a jacket, which is universally worn by all ranks, and a shirt and drawers, made of a coarse cotton cloth brought from Brazil. Children run about with no dress but their shirts until their fifth or sixth year. Their education is very little attended to, and is confined to mere rudiments. A man who is able to read and write, is considered to have all the learning he can desire."

The civil war between Monte Video and Buenos Ayres, which ensued upon the expulsion of the British forces from the Plata, has produced a lamentable change in the

aspect of this once flourishing city. For some time, the party in the Spanish interest maintained the ascendancy, notwithstanding an effort on the part of the creoles to follow the example of Buenos Ayres, in throwing off the yoke of Spain. At length, in 1810, open hostilities commenced between the two cities. The government of Buenos Ayres, having excited the people of the *Banda Oriental** to revolt, laid siege to Monte Video, which was carried on at intervals, being alternately abandoned and resumed, as they were successful or otherwise in the struggle with the Spanish royalists in the upper provinces, till the close of the year 1814, when the republicans succeeded in taking the place. During all this time, the intercourse between the city and the interior was almost entirely suspended, and its trade of course declined. The ruinous effects of a protracted siege may easily be imagined. But the misfortunes of the inhabitants were not at an end. A few months after the establishment of a republican government in Monte Video, (the first acts of which had been to set up a press and to open colleges and schools,) the troops of Buenos Ayres were called off to combat the enemy in the upper provinces, and the place fell soon after into the hands of Artigas and his banditti. This extraordinary man was a native of Monte Video, †

* That is, *the eastern side* (of the Uruguay); the name applied to the disputed territory or Spanish part of Rio Grande, lying between the Uruguay and the Atlantic, and bordering on the Plata.

† The following account of this extraordinary brigand was given to Mr. Brackenridge in 1818, by General Carrera, who had recently paid him a visit. "He painted him as a kind of half savage, possessing a strong natural mind, taciturn, but shrewd in his remarks when he chose to speak. He wore no uniform or mark of distinction, and took up his abode in a cart or waggon, caring little for the refinements or comforts of civilised life, to which, in fact, he had never been much accustomed. His life had been passed in the plains, and he had an aversion to living in towns, and to the constraints of polished society. His residence then, was at a small village on the

the son of respectable parents; but, when quite a youth, he became enamoured of the wild life of the herdsmen, and joined a band of robbers and smugglers who infested the country. In the course of time he became a noted leader. When, however, about the year 1798, the depredations and murders committed by these marauders compelled the Spanish government to establish a provincial corps for the express purpose of scouring the country and repressing their excesses, Artigas, after

Rio Negro, called Purification, consisting of a few huts constructed with mud, or ox hides; but his seat of government often shifted its place. He lives on the same fare, and in the same manner, with the gauchos around him, being in truth nothing but a gaucho himself. When told of a pamphlet published against him at Buenos Ayres, he spoke of it with the utmost indifference, and said, 'My people cannot read.' He has about him a small body of men, who are considered as regular soldiers, but his chief force consists of the herdsmen of the plains; its number is, therefore, extremely fluctuating, as it cannot be kept long together. His followers are greatly attached to him. His fame and superior intellect command their respect, at the same time that he indulges them in a certain kind of familiarity, which wins their affections. A few simple words, liberty, country, tyrants, &c. to which each one attaches his own meaning, serve as the ostensible bond of their union, which in reality arises from their predisposition to an unrestrained roving life. His authority is perfectly absolute and without the slightest control; he sentences to death, and orders to execution, with as little formality as a dey of Algiers. He is under the guidance of an apostate priest, of the name of Monterosa, who acts as his secretary, and writes his proclamations and letters; for although Artigas has not a bad head, he is by no means good at inditing. Monterosa professes to be, in the literal sense, a follower of the political doctrines of Paine; and prefers the constitution of Massachusetts as the most democratic, without seeming to know that the manners and habits of a people are very important considerations. The men bearing arms under Artigas, probably amount to six or eight thousand; but the number at any time embodied is much less; the want of commissaries and regular supplies, rendering it impossible to keep them together. The neighbouring Indian tribes are also devoted to him, principally through the means of his adopted son, an Indian named Andres."

having been for nearly twenty years an outlaw, was induced to accept of a free pardon and a commission, which his father had interest enough to obtain in the hope of reclaiming him; and so effectually did he hunt down his old companions, that the country was restored to comparative tranquillity. At the commencement of the civil war between Monte Video and Buenos Ayres, he had risen to the rank of captain in the Spanish service; but, in 1811, having, it is said, taken offence at some real or fancied insult, he deserted the royalists, and came to Buenos Ayres, where he was gladly received by the patriot government. At the head of his guerillas, he gained considerable reputation by defeating the Spanish troops under Elio, at Las Piedras. It was not long, however, before his impatience of control discovered itself, in a reluctance to obey the orders of Sarratea, the commander in chief; and he at length became quite unmanageable. On the convention of an Oriental congress by general Rondeau, for the purpose of nominating deputies for a national congress and a provincial governor, Artigas took fire, annulled the transactions of the assembly, and then, on finding his opposition fruitless, deserted Rondeau at a critical moment, and betook himself with his guerillas to the plains. Posadas, who had in the interim been appointed to the supreme authority, under the title of director, proceeded upon this to offer a reward for his apprehension as a deserter; but this had no other effect than to exasperate the rebel general into a declaration of independence. The people of Buenos Ayres now became alarmed at the prospect of a civil war; and as Artigas grew powerful and dangerous, they began to blame the government for the hostile measures which it had taken against him. A revolution took place. Alvear, who had succeeded to the directorship on the resignation of Posadas, was compelled to fly, and a series of humiliating but un-

successful negotiations was entered into with Artigas, by the new government, in the hope of bringing about a reconciliation. Monte Video was at this time in the hands of Artigas; he had taken possession of it in his title of 'Chief of the Orientals,' on the withdrawment of the Buenos Ayres troops: the city of Santa Fe and the Entre Rios, of which he claimed the protectorship, had also submitted to him. Such was the state of things at the Portuguese invasion. General Lecor, in answer to the remonstrances of the Buenos Ayres government, stated that he had no hostile intentions against *their* territories, but alleged, that the country he had invaded, had declared itself independent. Artigas, being unable to stand his ground against the Portuguese, without the aid of Buenos Ayres, Monte Video, and other principal places, submitted to the invading army with scarcely a show of opposition; many of the inhabitants, as well as the regiment of Libertos, having previously joined the standard of the United Provinces."

The marching of the Portuguese divisions, amounting altogether to ten thousand men, through the country, was destructive to the settlements and villages of the interior; but the occupation of the city by general Lecor with the principal division, consisting of five thousand men, gave the finishing blow to its prosperity. "Within eight years," says an eye-witness of the devastation that had been produced, "the population has been reduced at least two-thirds, many of the principal inhabitants have removed, property to an immense amount in the delightful suburbs, which contained a greater population than the town, has been destroyed, and the value of what remains, reduced to a mere trifle. It is, in fact, nothing but a garrison, with a few starved inhabitants, who are vexed and harassed by the military. I am told, that, notwithstanding this misery, there is a theatre here, and that

the evenings are spent in balls and dances, perhaps for want of other employments; the outward actions are not always the certain index of the heart. When we consider the stagnation of business, the depreciation of property, and the deficiency of supplies, we may easily conjecture what must be the condition of the people. There is little doubt, that had this place remained attached to the government of Buenos Ayres, the Portuguese would not have molested it; but the revolt of Artigas and his disorganising system, furnished too fair an opportunity for making themselves masters of a territory they had coveted for more than a century and a half.

"The town still retains proof of having once been flourishing. The streets are laid off at right angles, and are much more spacious than those of Rio, as well as less filthy, although little or no attention is paid to them: the buildings also are, in general, erected in better taste. The streets are paved, but the footways are narrow and indifferent.

"The next morning, we sallied forth at one of the gates, to take a view of the country outside the walls and within the Portuguese lines, which extend around about three miles. It was not then deemed safe to go beyond them, lest we should fall in with the *gauchos*, the people of Artigas. We soon found ourselves in the midst of ruins, whose aspect was much more melancholy than those of the city itself. Nearly the whole extent which I have mentioned, was once covered with delightful dwellings, and contiguous gardens, in the highest cultivation; it is now a scene of desolation. The ground scarcely exhibits traces of the spots where they stood, or of the gardens, excepting, here and there, fragments of the hedges of the prickly pear, with which they had formerly been enclosed. The fruit-trees, and those planted for ornament, had been cut down for fuel, or perhaps through wantonness. Over

the surface of this extensive and fertile plain, which a few years ago contained as great a population as the city itself, there are, at present, not more than a dozen families, upon whom soldiers are billeted, and a few uninhabited dilapidated buildings. This is the result of the unhappy sieges which have reduced the population of this city and its suburbs, from upwards of thirty thousand to little more than seven. From this, some idea may be formed of the havoc which has been made. We found, however, in riding along the basin above the town, a fine garden, which had escaped the common wreck. We alighted, and were hospitably received by the owner, who led us through his grounds, and shewed us his fruit-trees, and vegetables. It is from this spot that Lecor's table is supplied. The fruits, peaches, grapes, figs, oranges, apples, &c. are exceedingly fine. In this enchanting climate, (with the exception of a few of the tropical fruits,) all the fruits that are most esteemed ripen in the open air, in great perfection. In fact, I believe that the climate is surpassed by none in the world, not even by that of Italy or the south of France. It experiences neither the sultry heat of summer, nor the chilling blast of winter. The air is so pure, that putrefaction can scarcely be said to take place; we observed the remains of several dead animals, which seemed to have dried up, instead of going to decay. Flesh wounds are said to heal with difficulty, from the same cause." *

"The commerce of the *Banda Oriental*," adds this gentleman, "may almost be said to be at an end, the Portuguese having possession of all the ports where it was carried on, on that side of the Plata." How far Monte Video has recovered any portion of its trade, since the consolidation of the Brazilian empire, we are not informed.

* Brackenridge's Voyage to South America, in 1817, 18. vol. i. pp. 186—9.

Its harbour is so much superior to that of Buenos Ayres, —it is pronounced to be indeed the only one on the river that deserves the name,—that this circumstance will always render it an important station. At the same time, in Buenos Ayres and St. Pedro, it will always have two powerful rivals.

The road from Monte Video to Colonia, or Santo Sacramento, passes near the coast, through an undulating country, cut by a few unimportant streams. No place of any note intervenes, except Santa Luzia, on the river of the same name, where there is a port for small craft. The town of Colonia, so often referred to, contained, in 1809, only about fifty inconsiderable houses, pleasantly situated, and neat in their appearance, the inhabitants chiefly Spanish families. "The port," says Mr. Luccock, "is a valuable one, but remained unimproved in consequence of the jealousy with which it is regarded by Buenos Ayres,"—to which at this period it belonged, and a passage-boat sailed from one port to the other almost daily. In front of the town lies the isle of St. Gabriel, stated by Henderson to be "450 fathoms long," and two smaller islands. From Colonia, several roads branch off into the interior. All these places were within the *diocese* of Buenos Ayres. They have probably, ere this, been transferred to a Brazilian diocesan.—Crossing the mouth of the Uruguay, which joins the Plata about ten leagues to the north-west of Colonia, we enter the province of

PARANA.

THIS newly-acquired territory, respecting which little is certainly known, has sometimes been called the province of *Entre Rios*, as lying between the three large rivers of the Uruguay on the east, the Paraguay on the south and

west, and the Parana, which intersects it, and divides it into two unequal parts, northern and southern.* On the north, it borders on the province of Matto Grosso. Its extent, according to Cazal, is 650 miles in length from north to south, and 250 in breadth at its widest part: it is altogether within the temperate zone, lying between 24°, and 33° 30′ S. latitude.

Of the interior of this province, we have only very meagre and unsatisfactory accounts. Mr. Luccock describes the three provinces of Parana, Uruguay, and Rio Grande, generally, as the lowlands of southern Brazil. The Parana, before it touches this district, has become a mighty stream, having drained an immense tract of country. Arrived at the verge of the great table-land which forms the inner part of Brazil, it tumbles over a precipitous, rocky channel, at a place called *Sctequedas*, or Seven Falls. "Some have spoken," says Mr. Luccock, "of a continued rapid and broken advance of the river for several leagues; but Cazal represents it as here narrowed from a league in breadth to a hundred yards, by six small rocky islands, between which the water rushes and falls. I suspect that the breadth which he mentions is not that of the whole stream, but of each of the seven channels. About the same parallel of latitude, and formed by the same mountainous ridge, is a smaller cataract on the Paraguay called the *Estreito*, or Narrows, where the stream has

* Mr. Luccock contends, that the river which has the largest expanse of water should be called the *Parana* (a term always denoting a large body of water, and applied to the ocean itself), and that Paraguay should be the name of the tributary stream, *guay* signifying a creek or bay. Etymology, however, is a poor guide in such matters, especially in a country where we have so many little Rio Grande's, and so immense a 'little lake.' We have followed Mr. Henderson, or rather Cazal, in considering the immense stream which traverses the heart of the country longitudinally, as bearing the name of Paraguay, both above and below its confluence with the Parana at Corrientes.

worn itself a channel, with lofty, perpendicular sides, through which it flows as through a narrow street."

Among the numerous minor streams of the province are the Acarahy, or River of Cranes, which joins the Paraguay nearly opposite to the south-west point of the province of St. Paulo;* the Tibiquary, which, according to Cazal, falls into the Paraguay, ninety miles above its confluence with the Parana; the Cannabe, which, after a course of a hundred miles, enters the Paraguay, fifty miles to the north of the Tibiquary; the Galaguay, the Mirinay, and the Tacoary (Hole in the Rock), which fall into the Uruguay; and Cazal adds, the Jaguary (Water of Ounces), which, rising in the Serra Maracaju, runs into the Parana twelve miles below the Setequedas; but, Mr. Luccock thinks, that it is erroneously placed among the rivers of this province.

"The Parana and the Paraguay," continues this intelligent traveller, "rolling impetuously through a very extended course, bring down a great quantity of wreck, and soil of a reddish colour. When they have arrived at the more level grounds, and their currents are become comparatively slow, much of it is deposited; there it remains until the next wet season, when it is again urged onward by a resistless torrent, which not only sweeps the bottom, but frets and tears the banks which had been before raised. The Uruguay, a humbler stream, passes over a stony bed, but, before its union with the Plata, has formed its own peculiar estuary. In the course of ages, these rivers have produced some of the most extensive alluvial plains which now exist upon the face of the globe. The more solid parts of the country yield limestone,

* Mr. Henderson says, seventy miles below the *Setequedas*, being the first considerable river that enters the Parana by the right bank.

gypsum, marble, granites, and their accompanying spars. In general, the soil is rich, though in some places sandy, in others moist and clayey. It is in many parts covered with majestic woods, affording valuable timber; and produces rich gums, fruits of admirable flavour, and various medicinal and officinal herbs. Among the latter is the *matté*, an article peculiar to South America, and there in such general use, and so highly esteemed, as to demand a brief notice. In Brazil, it is commonly called *Cangunha*, or *Congonha*, which is probably a corruption of *Caancunha*, the Woman's Leaf. It grows, not in the province of Parana alone, but more or less over the whole table-land. Its qualities and consequent estimation are various: the best is said to be found in the vast serra of Maracaju. It is the produce of a low shrub, so much like the tea-plant of China, that two gentlemen who had been in the East, first led me particularly to notice it as a species of wild tea. Being curious to discover whether there was any other similarity besides the appearance, they gathered some of the leaves, dried them on hot stones, and produced a beverage of an agreeable, bitter taste, not unlike Bohea. In the common preparation of *matté*, the collected leaves are laid in large heaps upon hides, and placed between two fires, so as to be thoroughly dried. They are then broken small, and, though more yellow, form a substance much resembling what is called the dust of tea. When ready for sale, it is packed in hides, or in sacks made of a kind of reed or cane, opened and made flat. To prepare it for use, it is infused in water, generally in the half of a cocoa-nut shell, variously ornamented, and not poured into cups, but sucked through a pipe, which has a strainer at the lower end, to prevent the herb from entering the tube. In taking it, the vessel is commonly passed round to a whole company, and whatever disgust may arise from

the sight of some of the mouths receiving the pipe in their turn, it would be deemed the height of ill-breeding to decline a share of the *matté*." *

This traveller estimates the whole of the territory which Brazil had recently acquired, by the annexation of this province and the reductions to the empire, at not less than 70,000 miles,—" possessing from nature all the wealth, comforts, and beauties which a fine climate, fertile soil, and plenteous streams can bestow. It comprehends nearly the whole of the districts first civilised by the Jesuits. It is a level rather than a mountainous country, although there are in it some considerable ridges, and almost every part of it is sufficiently undulated to be dry and healthy. There are, indeed, portions of swampy ground near the great rivers; but these, if ever stocked with inhabitants, will form meadows of the richest description."

This part of the country was first discovered by Sebastian Cabot and Diego Garcia, on advancing up the Paraguay in 1526; but, for many years after its discovery, it remained almost unnoticed. At length, the Jesuits succeeded in extending their beneficent dominion into the eastern and middle parts of the province, by the civilisation of the Guarani hordes who inhabited it. In 1630, they had already founded no fewer than twenty large villages of Indians, called reductions (*reduçoes*), containing 70,000 inhabitants, when those who had advanced to the Upper Parana, with the intention of ex-

* This is doubtless the same production that has been mistaken for the tea-plant, which is alluded to by Mr. Koster, and is called by Mrs. Graham, wild tea. Mr. Henderson describes it as a large shrub, with leaves resembling those of the orange-tree, and it " tastes of mallows." The use of the beverage is stated to have prevailed from time immemorial among the Indians of the northern part of the province, and by them was introduced among the first inhabitants of Assumption.

tending the "spiritual conquest," were compelled by the Paulistas to fall back to the south of the Serra Maracaju. The Jesuit Montoya relates that, on this predatory invasion of the Upper Parana by the Paulista forces, consisting of not less than 8000 men, he and his colleagues retired, with 2000 Indians, below the Setequedas; but they were not long in security even here, for, in 1637, 140 Paulistas, at the head of 1500 Indians, attacked the reductions of Jesu Maria, St. Christovam, and St. Anna, in the Lower Parana, and carried off 7000 prisoners. The Jesuits next reduced the Tappes, whose lands lay further eastward; and, continuing to civilise these two tribes, they formed the celebrated Guaranitic empire, which is stated to have contained more than 200,000 inhabitants, and to have been able to send into the field an army of 40,000 men. In the *Entre Rios*, they are said to have established a powerful republic, comprising thirty-one large villages, inhabited by 100,000 souls. The state of these reductions, or missions, at the period of the expulsion of the Jesuits, in 1768, is thus described by Cazal.

"Each of the *reduçoes*, otherwise called missions, was a considerable town, laid out with straight streets. The houses, generally of earth, were whitened, covered with tiles, and had varandas on each side, in order to preserve them from the sun and rain. On seeing one, a correct idea might be formed of the whole. Each mission had only a mother church, generally of stone, magnificent and richly ornamented, some being entirely gilded. A vicar and a curate, both Jesuits, were the only ecclesiastics exercising the parochial functions, being, at the same time, inspectors of all civil economy; under whose direction there were magistrates (*corregidores*), elected annually; a *cacique*, or chief, elected for life; and other officers, each with his jurisdiction. With the exception

of these, every individual, of both sexes, wore a shirt reaching to the ancles, usually of white cotton. They cultivated *matté*, the cotton-tree, and such provisions as prospered best in the country. The whole was deposited in warehouses, from whence it was distributed daily to the people. Each family received an ounce of *matté*, four pounds of meat, and a certain measure of Indian corn, and more if it was judged necessary. All passed under the review of the magistrates or of other subordinate persons. The curates lived commodiously, near to their churches; and contiguous to their dwellings were two spacious houses; one destined for schools of reading, painting, architecture, music, and having shops for different manual occupations; the other was a *recolhimento*, or receptacle for a great number of young girls, who were engaged in different works, under the inspection of matronly women, already instructed. The women received on Monday a certain portion of cotton, which they were to return in the spun state on Saturday. The curate, accompanied by certain officers and masters, went daily, at eight o'clock, to visit the schools and shops. The signal of the last Ave-Marias was also that of the *rosario*, or counting of beads, at which all assisted. All superfluities were exported, with a large quantity of tallow, hides, and *matté;* and with the proceeds they paid the capitation-tax, and obtained in return European commodities. It is calculated, that the Indians possessed nearly two million head of cattle." *

The principal towns in the province are, Assumption, Corrientes, Parana or Santa Fé, Coruguaty, and Villa Rica.

Assumption *(Assumpçâo)*, the capital of the province and the residence of the governor, is the largest place in

* Henderson's History, pp. 136, 137.

Parana. It is situated on the margin of the Paraguay, which daily washes away, we are told, a part of the ground on which it is built. The city is built with no regularity, nor has it any handsome edifices. The greater part of the houses are of earth. There are, besides the Jesuits' college, which is now a seminary, convents belonging to the Dominicans, the Franciscans, and the Mercenarians,* to whose joint ghostly direction the missions were consigned on the expulsion of the Jesuits, another of *Recoletos*,† and a hospital. The bishop was a suffragan of La Plata. Though on the borders of a large river, and surrounded by a fertile and populous country, it is not, Mr. Luccock thinks, well situated for trade, producing no commodities for exportation, but such as can be bought on better terms at Buenos Ayres, having little demand for European manufactures, and possessing no circulating medium. The exports consist chiefly of *matté*, a little tobacco, *imbé* (a thread made of the fibres of the aloe), and wood, both in billets and planks. There are some plantations of cotton, and the sugar-cane is also cultivated; also maize, and a root called *aipim*, *aipyi*, or *pompim*, which serves as a substitute for bread. Honey and wax are stated by Cazal to be also abundant, and large herds are bred in the environs. None of these articles, however, are adapted to a European market, except such as are furnished in larger quantities and better quality by nearer ports. "When this part of the American continent was ceded to the Brazilian crown, some sanguine people," says Mr. Luccock, "imagined that, should the Plata ever be shut against British shipping, (a circumstance not very likely to occur,) commerce

* An order of friars instituted in Arragon by King James for the redemption of captives.

† Reformed friars, called also friars minors of St. Francis; they are rigid disciplinarians.

might be carried on to Assumption through St. Catharine's or St. Paul's. But, if the encouragements to trade thither should increase, it appears to me, that establishments at Colonia would answer more effectually; for that place must command the commerce of the Parana (Paraguay) and the rivers flowing into it, as soon as the country shall be quietly settled under its new masters."

Correntes is a smaller place than Assumption, but its superior situation, this traveller thinks, though the neighbourhood produces neither wheat nor *matté*, will probably enable it to outstrip its rival, when the river is better known to Europeans. It is situated "in the southern angle" of the confluence of the Parana with the Paraguay. The vicinity is marshy, and there are extensive woods, one consequence of which is, that the mosquitoes are peculiarly troublesome; locusts and ants are also very numerous, and destroy the mandioc plantations. Hides and timber are the chief exports. The inhabitants consist of "some Portuguese, many Indians, and a few negroes." Here, too, each of the three orders above referred to has a convent; the Jesuits' college is in ruins.

Ten leagues to the north of Correntes is the parish of Nehembuçu, on the Paraguay, where ship-building on a small scale is carried on, the neighbourhood affording excellent timber; but all the iron-work is sent up ready formed, there being no artisans on the spot competent to execute it. Mr. Luccock saw a well-constructed vessel of 400 tons, which had been built here.

Coruguaty and Villa Rica are the great marts for *matté*. The former is about thirty leagues north-east of Assumption, and three miles from the left margin of the river from which it takes its name: the latter is twenty leagues south-east of the metropolitan town. Santa Luzia, seated on the Paraguay, thirty leagues to the south of Correntes, and Little Santa Fé, commonly called Parana, situated

on the Paraguay in front of St. Fé, export large quantities of lime, gypsum, and plaster of Paris; a considerable part of the materials being drawn from hence, with which the houses of Monte Video and Buenos Ayres are white-washed. The only other towns are, *Itaty*, about thirty leagues above Correntes, described by Cazal as small, but regularly built, and well situated, inhabited chiefly by Indians, with a few Whites; the neighbourhood furnishes cotton, oranges, and water-melons; *Arroio da China*, situated on the Uruguay, thirty leagues above its embouchure, inhabited chiefly by Whites, who export cattle, wheat, and fruit; and *Corpus*, seated on the Parana, the most northerly of the missions, and "perhaps the pleasantest civilised station in the province."*

The two immense lakes into which the Paraguay expands,—that of Ibera or Ybyra, otherwise called Caracares, and that of Xarays, which lies to the north of the confluence of the rivers,—have already been referred to in the general survey of the country.† About sixty miles above the town of Itaty, in the midst of the woods, is another large lake, called Jagape: but little more is known of it than the name. In fact, no modern traveller has yet explored these savage regions, the central valley through which the Paraguay has for nearly six thousand years

* Cazal has given a list of twenty-three other places in the country of the Missions, founded by the Jesuits. The chief of these were *Candellaria*, the capital of the Guarani kingdom, situated on the left bank of the Parana; *St. Ignacio Guassu*, the most ancient of all the settlements, near the head of a branch of the Tibiquary; and *Yapegu*, where the Jesuits had a college richly ornamented, seated a little below the confluence of the Ibicuy with the Uruguay, and one of the largest among the missions. This last was the most southern, as Corpus was the most northern settlement. Of the present state of these places, nothing appears to be known: they have probably fallen into decay since the fall of the Jesuits, and it would answer no purpose to transcribe the meagre list of names.

† See page 85.

rolled on his mighty waters, unvexed by the intrusion of civilised man.

We have little more information respecting the

PROVINCE OF URUGUAY,

FORMED of the seven Spanish reductions on the eastern bank of that river, which were ceded to Portugal by the treaty of limits in 1750.* After their annexation to Brazil, they constituted a part of the captaincy of Rio Grande; but recently, a governor has been appointed for the province. The Uruguay divides it from that of Parana on the west, and from St. Paulo on the north; while, on the east and the south, it is bounded by the summits of the Serra which divides it from Rio Grande.† The great river which gives name to the province, rises near the coast, opposite to the Isle of Sta. Catherina, and runs westward, under the name of Pellotas, draining a vast extent of country: then, changing its course to the south-west and south, it assumes the name of Uruguay or the Red River. From its confluence with the Plata, it is navigable by launches for 200 miles, and by canoes for twice that distance; but its channel is generally rocky, its current rapid, and the upper part of the river has many falls. Among its tributaries are the *Hyjuhy*, which originating at the base of the mountain of St. Martinho, the most elevated summit of the great Cochilha, traverses the province from east to west, and discharges itself in front of Assumption, a few leagues to the north of St. Nicolau; and the *Ibicuy*, a large navigable river, but little known, which, running in a north-westerly direction for about a hundred miles, receives the Caziguay from the eastward, and the Toropy

* See pp. 47, 55.

† Mr. Luccock erroneously makes the province extend southward to the Plata.

from the north-east, the latter bringing with it the waters of the Ibicuy-mirim: from this junction, called *Forquilha*, or the Forks, it stretches away to the westward, receives the Jaguary, (or Jaquary,) a "winding, placid river, with much wood on its banks," and, twenty leagues below, the Hibipitu, soon after which it discharges itself into the Uruguay.*

The *reductions* in Uruguay were founded by the Spanish Jesuits, in the beginning of the seventeenth century, in order to civilise and convert to Christianity the native possessors of the country, by means similar to those that had been successfully practised in Parana. The country was then inhabited by various hordes of Tappes, a branch of the Guaranis; a people less vicious, and more disposed to receive instruction, than any other of the South American tribes. They lived divided into various villages, of which the most populous bore the name of the nation. It is not known what was the number of these; but the Jesuits reduced them to seven, which were hence denominated *reduções*, or reductions. The names of these seven celebrated missions, and their population in 1801, the period when they were conquered by the Portuguese, are given by Cazal as follows:—

	Inhabitants.
St. Francisco de Borja, ...	1,300
St. Miguel, ...	1,900
St. Joam, ...	1,600

* Mr. Luccock reckons the Rio Negro among the rivers of this province, owing to his error respecting its southern boundary. It is, in fact, a river of Rio Grande do Sul, and falls into the Uruguay, in about lat. 33° 25′ south. At the confluence of these rivers stands the town of St. Domingos Suriano, "a small place, but important as a port:" its exports consist of wheat, pulse, hides, tallow, firewood, lime, and stone. This river, the course of which is estimated at 300 miles, affords a useful communication with the interior, and was much frequented by the Portuguese traders when driven from Colonia.

	Inhabitants.
St. Angelo,	1,960
St. Nicolau,	3,940
St. Lourenco,	960
St. Luiz,	2,350

"The whole of these," we are told, "were, and yet are, upon the same plan. The houses are of earth, with straight streets, and varandas on the sides, which protect them against the rain and heat. Many of the Indians understand the Spanish and Portuguese, and express themselves tolerably well in both languages. They exercise almost all the requisite manual occupations and various mechanical arts with intelligence; they likewise manufacture coarse woollens and cottons. *Matté* is the only article of exportation. In each mission, when governed by the Jesuits, there was a school for reading, writing, and speaking the Spanish language, established by royal order."*

St. Miguel, the most easterly of the reductions, is considered, Cazal says, as the present capital of the province. It is situated nearly in the heart of the province, about twenty-five leagues distant from the Uruguay, and thirty leagues east-north-east of St. Borja, the most southern reduction, which is situated about five leagues north of the confluence of the Ibicuy with the Uruguay. St. Nicolau was the former capital, and appears to be more advantageously placed, being near the banks of the Uruguay, and having a small stream, which falls into the Paratini. It is the furthest towards the north-west, and is about twenty-five leagues distant from St. Miguel.

That part of the province which extends to the southward of the Ibicuy, and, indeed, the whole of the adjacent province of Rio Grande, as far south as the Rio Negro, may be considered as almost *terra incognita*. Some trade

* Henderson's Brazil, p. 150.

has been carried on by means of the latter river, on the banks of which Artigas had his head-quarters; but the country is still, for the most part, in the possession of the Indians. They are chiefly the descendants of the Charrua tribe, who inhabited the country from Maldonado to the Uruguay, and the conquest of whom is stated by Azara to have cost the Spaniards more bloodshed, than their wars with the Incas and with Montezuma. At the close of the seventeenth century, this once numerous clan was reduced to about four hundred men. These are the Indians referred to, as being devoted to Artigas. To the north of the Charrua tribes, reside the Minuâno Indians; they occupy the lands south of the river Ibicuy, and westward of the Tappes of Lake Patos. Between this tribe and the Charruas, there is said to exist perpetual enmity. Their territory is watered by the Igarupay. Further northward, in the plains watered by the Pellotas, reside the Guaycanans.

To these four nations or clans, viz. the Charruas, the Minuânoes, the Tappes, and the Guaycanans, Cazal adds the Patos. Of these, he says, there is no account, and they appear to be extinct, having most probably become intermixed with other tribes. The absence of all distinct record respecting this supposed tribe, renders it doubtful whether it ever had an existence. If the Lagoa dos Patos takes its name from the water-fowl by which it is frequented, as Mr. Luccock states, it is probable that the Indians in that neighbourhood were named by the early settlers from the lake. The *Ilha dos Patos* (St. Catharina) possibly derived its name from the same bird; and the supposition that the lake and the island were named from the aborigines, may have led to the idea that there was a tribe of Indians so called.

We have now completed the survey of the provinces South of Rio, so far as the imperfect state of our informa-

tion with regard to a large portion of this fine territory admits of. It is reserved for future travellers to explore the banks of the three mighty rivers which afford the only means, at present practicable, of penetrating into the interior. The plains of the Uruguay (compared by an American traveller to the Mississippi territory, although the river itself bears a nearer resemblance to the Ohio,) will, probably, first receive the civilising influence of commerce, which is gradually extending itself in all directions from the ports of the eastern and southern coast. In two ways will commerce tend to promote civilisation; by introducing those artificial wants which stimulate industry, and by draining the country of its innumerable herds of wild cattle, which afford the means of subsistence to a thinly scattered, rude, and indolent population, precluding all attention to husbandry and every other species of improvement. With the decrease of these herds, the natives will either retire, or be compelled to cultivate the soil. In fact, the conquest of the country, it has been remarked, would be sooner effected by destroying the herds, than by making war upon the natives. "The pastoral life," observes Mr. Southey, "is necessarily unfavourable to civilisation; but no where has it been found so completely to debase and brutalise man as in the grazing countries of South America." The reason is obvious: the herdsman here partakes less of the shepherd than of the hunter; and the wandering habits of pastoral tribes, who nevertheless generally move in companies, and have some kind of social compact, are less incompatible with a considerable degree of civilisation, than the solitary life and fierce habits of the *gaucho* or back-woodsman. Those who "have not patience to wait while their bread is growing," will always be found a desperate, treacherous, and cruel race. The introduction of agriculture, therefore, is the first step, and a most important one, in civilisation. The

change which it superinduces in the domestic habits, the new ideas to which it gives birth respecting property, and the consequent necessity of some kind of government for mutual security, the pacific policy which it becomes the interest of the community to adopt, and the exchange which is made by the husbandman of the rifle for the hoe and the millstone, of the spear for the pruning-hook,—all these attendant circumstances, together with the local attachments which are eventually created, give to Agriculture the character of a beneficent invention, worthy of being attributed by the heathen to their gods. Under the reign of Ceres and of Bacchus, the face of nature is first taught to smile. The Indians, who never heard of those old classic deities, have a legend of their own, which has a similar meaning, ascribing to their Paye Tzome, who taught them the use of the mandioc, the character of a divine benefactor.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY J. MOYES, GREVILLE STREET.

University of California
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
305 De Neve Drive - Parking Lot 17 • Box 951388
LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA 90095-1388
Return this material to the library from which it was borrowed.

C
463
C61

THE LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
Santa Barbara

Unive
So
L